

Chapter 1901 - Before the Testing Gold Rock

Chapter 1901 Before the Testing Gold Rock

“If no one can compete against No Flower, this round will be over,” Moon Wheel King said, as he stood up.

He understood the thoughts of those from Moon Garden, though. He knew no one else from Moon Garden could compete with what they had just witnessed. So, he did not want to waste any further time. It'd only reflect poorly on the Rebate and Moon Garden.

“Moon Wheel King, I would like to suggest a friend that may be able to compete against No Flower.” Du Lishe suddenly bowed before Moon Wheel King.

“Lishe? What are you doing?” Rebecca pulled her sister back, unsure what preposterous thing her sister was about the attempt.

“Lishe? Which student are you recommending?” Moon Wheel King was shocked by this. Du Lishe was his daughter, but he couldn't imagine who she might be hoping to suggest.

“Who I recommend is not someone privileged to be a member of Moon Garden. It is the student of Knife Queen, however. It is Han Sen of Planet Eclipse.” Du Lishe smiled.

After that, Han Sen was frozen. Thus far, he had only been spectating. The rest of Narrow Moon was frozen, too. No one expected Du Lishe would request Han Sen like that.

Qing Li was taken aback, too. She pulled Du Lishe close and said, “What are you doing?”

“Did you not say Han Sen's words were far better than No Flower's? If that is true, then I recommend he be the one to compete against No Flower. If he wins, he will only make the Rebate look better,” Du Lishe said.

“That’s just what I thought. I don’t know for a fact that Han Sen really is better,” Qing Li said quickly.

Du Lishe wore a mystic smile and said, “It does not matter, even if he does lose. He is not one of the Rebate, and he is not a member of Moon Garden. He can’t embarrass us, even if he fails.”

Qing Li did not know what to say to that. She stared at Du Lishe and said, “If he loses, it will embarrass Knife Queen. That’d be even worse!”

Before Du Lishe could say something more, Moon Wheel King frowned on stage and said, “Han Sen is not on the member list.”

“Moon Wheel King, I have heard about Knife Queen’s student. If we can truly compete and compare our techniques, I would relish the chance.” No Flower bowed before Moon Wheel King.

When Speechless and No Flower returned from Planet Eclipse, they talked between each other about how they might get to know Han Sen more. The best way to do that was to force him on stage and challenge him to such a competition.

Hearing Du Lishe suggest Han Sen, the eyes of Speechless and No Flower gleamed with radiance. They wouldn’t let this opportunity slip away. Before Speechless herself agreed, No Flower was agreeing.

Since No Flower agreed, though, Moon Wheel King had no choice but to ask, “Is Han Sen even here?”

“Yes, I am.” Han Sen stood up and bowed before Moon Wheel King.

“Are you willing to compete against No Flower?” Moon Wheel King asked.

“I am willing to,” Han Sen answered. And it shocked everyone around the stage.

Even Yisha, who was on Planet Blade, was flabbergasted to hear Han Sen agree to compete against No Flower.

Han Sen thought that Yisha had let him come so that he could prove himself. He thought this had already been prearranged, and that's why he accepted the challenge so quickly. So, he had already prepared to show-off again and make Yisha take him even more seriously as a student. He hoped she would be willing to spend even more resources on his development.

Yisha actually wanted Han Sen to earn her some extra reputation, but No Flower's Touching Flower Finger was incredibly strong. It'd be difficult to find a King class person to compete with that. So, she didn't expect this would be what Han Sen would agree to so soon.

"In that case, you can come on stage and compete against No Flower." Moon Wheel King thought Du Lishe was trying to prank Han Sen, and that was why he asked Han Sen if he was willing to do it. It'd also give Han Sen the chance to avoid participation.

But Han Sen was really willing to go on stage, and that shocked Moon Wheel King. Han Sen walked toward the stage, then stepped up to the testing gold rock.

"Amitabha! Mister Han, we meet again! To be able to compete against you in the display of geno arts is a grand honor," No Flower nodded and said.

"Are you being polite?" Han Sen asked, as he walked closer to the testing gold rock. He wasn't keen on talking too much with the Buddha.

Speechless looked at Han Sen. She really wanted to see how Han Sen would choose to compete with No Flower. She didn't believe he could actually have a skill that exceeded what they had just witnessed, though.

No matter what the case might be, this was a fine opportunity to observe Han Sen. Speechless watched intently, not wanting to miss out on a single detail.

Many Nobles of Narrow Moon were not happy with the concept of Han Sen actually going on stage.

“He is just a Baron. He is actually going to compete with No Flower? Even if you used your *ss to think, you’d know that this won’t end well.”

“Yeah, he’s not a member of Moon Garden. To hear him actually be recommended... Why would Du Lishe invite him? Does she want to embarrass him?”

“And why didn’t Han Sen just say no when Moon Wheel King asked him? It’d be better than being humiliated here.”

“Yeah, I don’t know what he is thinking. He is just a Baron, after all. He actually thinks his skills can rival those of No Flower, which were learned from a Buddha King? He’s just asking to get beaten.”

“He is cocky. Far too cocky. He got a King class knife and practiced Teeth knife, but so what? His confidence grew way too quickly, and he is acting far too big for his britches.”

“He is brave, but obviously stupid.”

“This will be very embarrassing. Han Sen going up against No Flower is like a fake product being taste-tested in a face-off versus the real thing.”

“If he can go up there, I can do it, too. At least I’m a Viscount!”

“Not even an Earl would be able to do much versus that. I felt the will earlier, and it was really crushing.”

Rebecca frowned and scolded Du Lishe. “This has gone too far! Although Han Sen is not a member of Moon Garden, he is now representing the Rebate in this competition. It will be embarrassing for us if he loses.”

Du Lishe shrugged and said, “You can’t blame this on me. He is the one who decided to come up here. He could have said no. It’s not my fault that he insisted.”

Qing Li thought about things for a moment, and then said, "If Han Sen was willing to go, that also means he is confident about winning. Maybe he really does have a mind that was stronger than No Flower's."

"Impossible!" Rebecca and Du Lishe said at the same time. They did not believe Han Sen could beat No Flower. No Flower was so strong, it was like he was cheating.

Du Lishe recommended Han Sen just for fun, though. She didn't expect he'd win.

It wasn't just Rebecca and Du Lishe thinking this way, however. Most of the Rebate didn't think he'd win, either. Not even Moon Wheel King and Yisha herself.

Han Sen didn't trouble his mind with all this, though. He had a plan. He walked up to the testing gold rock and had a look at what No Flower had written. With his finger, he drew on the other side.

Chapter 1902 - Buddha Touching a Flower

Chapter 1902 Buddha Touching a Flower

Han Sen stood in front of the testing gold rock, and his mind moved quickly.

No Flower's Touching Flower Finger mind was not a King class display, but to young Nobles, it certainly seemed that strong.

Teeth Knife's knifemind was stronger than No Flower's, but Han Sen could not use it. If he used all of his power, then he could definitely triumph. But Yisha would become suspicious of him.

Even if he didn't use Teeth Knife knifemind, Han Sen's own sword mind was not weak, either. He could easily defeat No Flower with that, too, but it was something Yisha had already seen before. If Han Sen used it, he'd expose the fact he was Dollar to her, and it was highly likely Yisha wouldn't let him go after that.

Fortunately, Han Sen had an alternate plan. Unlimited Sutra had a record of Touching Flower Finger. Although Han Sen had not practiced it yet, he knew what sort of geno art it was.

Every Buddha knew Touching Flower Finger, and that proved to him it wasn't a difficult geno art to get to grips with.

No Flower's version was so strong because he had been gifted the strength of Wilted's mind.

"Ancient Devil, it is just as you have said. Show me your power and be sincere about it." Han Sen placed his will inside Destiny's Tower. He spoke to Ancient Devil.

Ancient Devil smiled and said, "As you wish."

After that, Ancient Devil remained where he sat. He raised up his finger to draw.

Ancient Devil was now using Buddha's Touching Flower Finger. It was different from No Flower's Touching Flower Finger, which had been altered with Wilted's mind. When Ancient Devil brought out his finger, it was like a Buddha touching a flower. Everything in the world was inside that finger.

When Ancient Devil drew, Han Sen felt his heart connect to him. Han Sen could feel what he felt, and see what he saw.

Han Sen was in sync with Ancient Devil. He brought out his finger and pressed it against the testing gold rock. The movement of the two was perfectly synchronized.

But Ancient Devil was drawing in the air, as Han Sen's finger ran across the surface of the stone.

"Hey! It's Touching Flower Finger. Han Sen is using Touching Flower Finger?"

"It looks that way, but why does he possess the Buddha's Touching Flower Finger?"

"Touching Flower Finger is not rare, and it is common amongst the Buddha. Many outsiders know how to use it, too, so it's nothing too surprising. It surely is strange to see him want to copy and write it down, too, immediately after."

"One flower. One leaf. One world." Han Sen did not pay heed to what others said about him.

Boom!

When the Nobles saw what Han Sen had written, they fell into a stunned silence. Quickly, a cold sweat developed across all their bodies. They were so scared, it was like a curse had been laid upon them. They didn't move, and all they could do was solemnly stare at Han Sen's written word.

There were no petals, falling like No Flower's. And there was no threat of death or wilting, either.

Even so, everyone felt scared, witnessing what Han Sen had written. It zapped into the deepest recesses of their minds and latched on to them.

Seeing those words was like watching a Buddha stroking flowers without talking. It was like he could see through everything.

He was smiling as he went, but the smile was worse than the devil's.

At least the devil would lure creatures to fall with him, but this Buddha went straight for the darker side of your heart. They couldn't hide anything. It was like their ugliest, filthiest, and vilest sides were being exposed for all to see.

Facing death required courage. If they fought and failed, they could at least close their eyes and be at peace. But in front of that Touching Flower Buddha, they didn't have the strength to face it. They felt nasty. They felt as if they were muddied with sin.

"Argh!" One of the young Nobles, with a weak will, started screaming with his eyes closed. It was like he was running from something.

The Dukes and Marquise were all pale.

Night River King looked at Han Sen, and he too seemed very glum.

Including Clear Sea Buddha, all the Buddhas were in utter shock. None of them could summon the strength to say a word.

"Blergh!" A young Noble pulled out his knife and drove it into his own heart. He couldn't withstand the pressure, and so he decided to kill himself.

"I didn't kill you! I didn't steal it! I didn't do it!" More young people started to scream and run, erupting into a frenzy of madmen. They all kept on talking nonsense.

“Amitabha! Mister Han, please stop! No Flower has lost!” Clear Sea Buddha said the Buddha catchphrase, and the young Nobles woke up from the trance of that flower mind. They all looked pale, as if they had just awoken from the most horrible, lucid nightmare.

Han Sen stopped moving his finger, and he pulled it back slowly. He had only written half of it.

No one could face that fear.

“A Buddha truly touching the flower is pierced and reflected on people’s minds, yielding only fear. One thought to be a Buddha, and one thought to be a Demon. It is hard to understand that, and Mister Han can practice Touching Flower Finger to this level? The Buddhas can only be ashamed of themselves. Where did you learn this?” Clear Sea Buddha looked at Han Sen with massive shock. He tried to ask as politely as he could, but he had trouble suppressing the shock.

Many people practiced Touching Flower Finger, but very few established a connection with its true meaning.

No Flower had associated it with wilting, but Han Sen had actually shown the real meaning right here. Ever since the Buddhas had created that technique, fewer than five people had ever achieved what had just been performed.

Han Sen was a Baron and not a Buddha, and yet he could practice Touching Flower Finger to that extent. It was all so difficult to imagine.

“It is a simple finger art, and No Flower explained it well enough. So, I guess I have just learned it. It didn’t feel all too smooth, so I added a few modifications of my own. I apologize if I did not write it down well.” Han Sen smiled.

After Han Sen said that, the Buddha stared at him in silence. The Nobles of Narrow Moon almost choked.

“So, he learned some... He modified it... And he says he did not write it down well...”

All the Nobles felt as if their lives had been wasted. They did not know geno arts could be practiced like that.

Yisha and Moon Wheel King looked at Han Sen strangely. Clear Sea King looked shocked. After a while, he said the Buddha catchphrase again. “Amitabha! Mister Han is talented. He is very well suited for the Buddha arts. If you ever come and visit us, I will be eagerly waiting for Han Sen’s Buddha-talk.”

Clear Sea Buddha, saying something like that, put another shock upon the assembly of Narrow Moon.

“This is too much!” Han Sen frowned. Ancient Devil’s mind was stronger than he thought. Even the Buddha were shocked by it all.

Chapter 1903 - It Is Not Bad

Chapter 1903 It Is Not Bad

When Han Sen returned to his seat, everyone looked at him differently. Now, people were looking at him as if he was a monster.

Han Sen was not in a good mood. He had only wanted to show off Ancient Devil's mind a little bit, but that display had obviously gone off the rails. He wondered what the Kings of Narrow Moon might be thinking of him now; Yisha in particular.

"Ancient Devil, why did you do that?" Han Sen asked coldly, placing his will back inside Destiny's Tower.

"I was just giving you what you wanted," Ancient Devil responded.

He sat where he was, unmoving. He smiled like a Buddha touching flowers.

Han Sen didn't say anything in response. He merely looked at Ancient Devil for a bit, then left the tower.

"Ancient Devil is way too dangerous. I can't risk letting him out," Han Sen thought to himself.

What happened next, in the gathering, was suddenly much more boring. After No Flower and Han Sen's performances, even though there were many talented Buddhas and Rebates, the event was a slog.

People weren't thinking much about the event anymore. People's minds were too preoccupied with Han Sen.

"An amazing mind, Qing Li. You were right. Han Sen's mind is strong. I wonder how he managed to practice that." Du Lishe looked strange.

Qing Li did not know what to say. This was not the mind she had previously seen. What she had seen was Teeth Knife knifemind. But now, they were not going to believe that, so all she did was smile.

“It is a shame he has hair. Otherwise, I would believe him to be one of the Buddhas. He could most certainly be a King class Buddha, or even a deified one.” Rebecca kept looking over to where Han Sen was sitting.

That Buddha sentence shocked the people of Moon Garden. It was hard to imagine that it had all come out of a Baron.

The event kept on chugging along, and when Speechless took the stage, she looked over to where Han Sen was sitting. She bowed and said, “I hope I can compete so skillfully against Han Sen. Please teach me something.”

Being challenged by Speechless like that, made everyone look at Han Sen again. They were all hoping that he’d accept. People in Narrow Moon knew Han Sen could use Teeth powers.

Han Sen shook his head. “You are too polite. I have not practiced sword skills much. I am afraid I’d perform too poorly for you to see.”

Han Sen was too obvious earlier, and he wasn’t keen on the prospect of performing again in front of everyone.

“That is okay. Skills are all connected. Knife Queen’s Teeth Knife is so famous, and if you can use knife skills, I would be glad,” Speechless said.

Now that Speechless had said that, it would reflect poorly if Han Sen continued to decline. So Han Sen thought for a moment and then said, “I am not very good at sword skills, and I don’t like hitting women. How about this person next to me? Her sword skills are great. If you really want someone worth competing against, ask her to practice with you.”

Hearing that, Speechless frowned and looked upset.

“Han Sen, Speechless is a guest here. You cannot be so rude as to deny this,” Moon Wheel King said.

“Okay,” Han Sen answered, standing up.

Speechless suddenly smiled and said, “In that case, I will fight against her. And if she loses, you will compete with me. Is that correct?”

“If you really are that desperate for this, then okay.” Han Sen nodded. They were both Viscount class opponents, so Han Sen did not believe Gu Qingcheng could lose.

“I am sorry to bother you, my lady.” Speechless bowed to Gu Qingcheng.

Gu Qingcheng rolled her eyes at Han Sen, got up, and walked to the stage.

Narrow Moon and the Buddhas were curious. They did not know why Han Sen would let his subordinate practice against Speechless.

Many people thought Han Sen was just a Baron. He had a powerful will, but not powerful strength. Perhaps he did not want to embarrass himself, so he pushed a subordinate out to take the fall for him.

But that did not make sense, either. If she lost, he would have to go fight Speechless, anyway.

As people guessed what Han Sen was trying to accomplish, the practice started.

Speechless let a worker bring out the same Viscount sword. Then she said to Gu Qingcheng, “If you think this sword is poor, you may feel free to use your own.”

“It’s the same.” Gu Qingcheng picked up the offered sword.

Speechless smiled and picked up the other. She said, “Please.”

Gu Qingcheng pulled the sword back and swung it at Speechless.

It was an ordinary technique to draw back the sword. But in her hands, it wasn't so simple.

Gu Qingcheng's sword skills were overbearing. The moment she held the sword, they were at one with each other.

In Speechless' eyes, it suddenly felt as if her entire world had been taken by that sword. She could not dodge the quick strike, and all she could do was use her hand to fight against it.

"What a powerful swordmind!" Speechless was shocked. She did not expect a subordinate of Han Sen could be such an effective swordsman.

She never anticipated that the sword would come at her with such speed. Speechless gathered up her sword power and composed her swordmind to fight back.

But Speechless was not very good at fighting in this manner. She wasn't called Speechless because she was mute, but because the Buddha that opened her eyes was called Speechless. She was grateful for that, and so she called herself Speechless.

Speechless Buddha King was good at Speechless Sword. But Speechless Sword was silent. It was a sonic-power skill that no one could hear. It was scary.

The swords made no sound, and no one spoke.

Many of Speechless Buddha's past enemies never knew what happened to them, or why they were killed. Their deaths had come faster than they could utter a word.

Speechless Sword was scary, but you could not fight it head-to-head.

The two swords clashed against each other. But then, Gu Qingcheng returned her sword and walked off the stage. Katcha!

Everyone saw Gu Qingcheng leave the stage, and as they did, the Nobles wondered what had just occurred. And then, they heard a sound. Speechless's sword had been broken in half.

Her eyebrow was now home to a small cut. Blood dripped out from the laceration, and it looked like another red mole.

Everyone was shocked. Speechless had been quickly defeated by Han Sen's subordinate. The whole event had been silent, as if the spectators had watched a battle of ghosts.

"Sword skills like that.. Where do my sword skills stack up against that?11 Everyone recalled what Han Sen had said, and their stomachs felt hollow.

Chapter 1904 - Three Month Promise

Chapter 1904 Three Month Promise

The exchange was supposed to be a stage for Moon Garden and its members, but Han Sen's Buddha writing and Gu Qingcheng's display of sword skills made the aforementioned members—and the Buddhas—look rather lame. Han Sen was on the tip of everyone's tongue now.

People thought Gu Qingcheng was a family member of Han Sen. Believing that, it meant one member of his family could beat Speechless Buddha. Han Sen also had Teeth Knife and created a mind simply by watching a Buddha's performance. It was all so unbelievable. The whole of Narrow Moon was fascinated.

The real elites did not believe Han Sen's words, though. They did not think he could learn as simply as he had claimed. Yisha was one of these non-believers, too. As soon as the exchange ended, Han Sen was summoned to the palace. "Where did you learn Touching Flower Finger?" Yisha asked.

"I found this book, and I learned Touching Flower Finger from it." Han Sen gave Unlimited Sutra over to Yisha.

Han Sen had prepared an explanation when he borrowed Ancient Devil's mind. But Ancient Devil's mind had been too strong, and so Yisha found it difficult to believe him.

"This must be the original version of Unlimited Sutra. It is a secret skill of the Buddha. Where did you get it from?" Yisha looked at the Unlimited Sutra text and seemed very surprised.

"When I was young, I saved an injured man. He was an old fellow. I brought him home, and I healed him. He gave this to me before he left." Han Sen had prepared all the stuff he was going to tell her.

“What did he look like? Can you confirm he was one of the Buddha?” Yisha asked.

“I was very young, so I didn’t know what a Buddha was back then. Even so, I don’t think he was. I’m fairly sure that the old man had hair.” Han Sen described Ancient Devil’s face to her, but with a few added years.

Yisha heard what he had to say, but she did not immediately respond. After a while of thought, she said, “You used this Unlimited Sutra to practice Touching Flower Finger to such a high degree of skill?”

“Yes,” Han Sen forced himself to say. He was going to pretend he was a genius, so Yisha might be willing to part with more resources. But Ancient Devil had deliberately overcast his mind and made Han Sen look ridiculous. He didn’t know if Yisha would believe him.

Yisha didn’t believe him entirely, either. It was just the Unlimited Sutra, from what she could see. There didn’t seem to be any extra guidance. Furthermore, Han Sen was just a commoner. No one should believe he could reach that level.

“It looks like you are a genius,” Yisha said, while looking right at Han Sen.

She could not completely trust what Han Sen said, but she was still happy about his performance. She didn’t want to think about Han Sen possibly lying.

“Thank you very much. I am a bit stupid, and others can learn many things. All I can learn is one thing at a time. I am afraid that is why I am so slow. I keep practicing, as I did with that, and that is how it happened,” Han Sen said.

Yisha looked at Unlimited Sutra, and then looked at Han. “Good. In that case, keep being this stupid self of yours. If your stupid way can enable you to practice Touching Flower Finger to such a high level, I am sure you can practice Teeth Knife knifemind just fine. Is three months enough for that, do you think?”

“My Queen, Teeth Knife is the ultimate knife skill. It is not all that easy to generate a knifemind. I am afraid I will only disappoint you again.” Han Sen pretended to look bitter. On the inside, however, he was delighted.

This was a two-birds-one-stone affair. With the title of a genius, he could use Teeth Knife knifemind without being required to hide his ability.

“Just this Unlimited Sutra can yield a mind like this? Right now, I will teach you. I will make you generate a knifemind. You don’t need a deep mind for this, and you are already willing to say you cannot achieve this? Are you telling me that Teeth Knife is worse than Unlimited Sutra? Or are you simply saying that I am a poor teacher?” Yisha looked coldly at Han Sen, as she spoke to him.

“That is not what I meant! I will do what I can. I will not disappoint you.” Han Sen quickly swore to God.

“Good. This is the good student I know.” Yisha nodded.

Yisha did not actually believe what Han Sen was telling her, but she did not want to mistakenly place blame on him. So, she gave Han Sen a test. If Han Sen could generate a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months, it really would prove that he was a genius. And if that was true, she would go ahead and treat him even better.

If Han Sen failed this, then Han Sen would have a problem. And if so, he would need to be investigated. She could not blindly spend resources on him.

Han Sen knew her thought process on this matter, though. And he was really happy about it. Generating a Teeth Knife knifemind was not even a test. It was way too easy.

“What is that family member of yours called? Where did you take her from?” Yisha asked.

“My Queen, her name is Gu Qingcheng. She is a member that comes from Planet Crooked Rock,” Han Sen said quickly.

“Not bad. But you should keep an eye on her. People with a swordmind like that are usually out for something else,” Yisha warned Han Sen.

Yisha knew many factions had sent spies to keep tabs on Han Sen. She thought Gu Qingcheng might be one of them. That was because Gu Qingcheng did not use all her powers against Speechless. Yisha wouldn't feel this way if she had.

Yisha had much greater strength than Gu Qingcheng, but Gu Qingcheng's swordmind might rival Yisha's.

Speechless only received her mind from an old monster. Gu Qingcheng was the real old monster.

“Yes, I will ensure that I am careful.” Han Sen nodded.

After he left Yisha, Han Sen took a ship back to Planet Eclipse. He called Qiao, Lan Se, and Stay Up Late.

He invited them to Planet Eclipse, but Qiao and Lan Se thought things were fine with Seven Mirror. What's more, they had friends there now. And so, they made no plans to go to Planet Eclipse.

Stay Up Late wanted to know more about the geno universe, so he made plans to come. He was hoping to learn more news about the location of Littleflower and Nine-Life Cat, too. He did not want to stay in the same place for too long.

After talking with Qiao, Han Sen returned his mind to Destiny's Tower. There, he spoke with Ancient Devil.

Ancient Devil was trapped in the tower, but he never assumed himself to be at a disadvantage. He spoke to Han Sen as if they were both equals.

When Han Sen borrowed help from Ancient Devil, he told Ancient Devil that if co-operation went well, he'd be willing to give him a chance.

Helping Han Sen with his mind was just a part of his show of sincerity. He had performed too well, though. Han Sen couldn't be sure if he had done it on purpose, but Han Sen believed that he had.

“Ancient Devil, you should co-operate properly. You shouldn't make stupid moves.” Han Sen hadn't killed him because he knew too many secrets. And Han Sen wanted those secrets. All he could think about was finding a safe method for getting Ancient Devil to talk.

Han Sen wanted those secrets too badly to get rid of Ancient Devil.

Chapter 1905 - Private Female Club

Chapter 1905 Private Female Club

In Narrow Moon's Full Moon meeting room.

Six Kings had shown up for this meeting. Yisha, Moon Wheel King, Night River King, Flower King, Black Moon King, and Shadow King.

"Knife, do you really believe what he tells you? Despite being only a Baron, he has managed to achieve a mind such as that with Unlimited Sutra? Seriously? Not even Barons who go on to become deified elites are that strong," Night River King said.

Black Moon King coughed and said, "Night River, let's not impose limits that might not exist. This universe is so grand in its reaches that there could be anything out there. Han Sen really is talented. Just because you are unable to achieve such feats of might, don't presume others cannot either."

"Black Moon, don't talk such nonsense. Look at this universe! Are there any Barons with that level of capability?" Night River frowned.

"If everyone was able to do it, why else would we single out the exemplary and call them geniuses?" Black Moon King asked slowly.

Night River King started to respond, but Moon Wheel King cut him off. Moon Wheel King looked at Flower King and Shadow King, and said, "What do you two think?"

Flower King groaned and said, "Han Sen's power seems unlikely, but we can't claim that there's a problem without knowing what it is. That hardly seems fair."

Moon Wheel King nodded. He looked at Shadow King, and Shadow King said, "I would rather put an end to this before it gets out of hand."

Yes!” Night River King said immediately. “Han Sen’s history is far too strange, and he cannot be kept.”

Moon Wheel King looked at Black Moon King, and Black Moon King said, “Killing a genius like that makes no sense. It will just scare off the other races, and no other race will want to co-operate with us.”

“Knife, you understand where we’re coming from, yes? He is your student, so it is best that you decide what to do.” Moon Wheel King looked at Yisha.

Yisha said calmly, “I gave him a chance. If he passes the test, I can prove that he is fine. If he cannot pass the test, I will sever ties with him and search for any threat he might pose. If I find something, I will get rid of him.”

“What is the test? If he really is a spy from some other race, he will have come prepared. He will pass the test.” Night River King looked displeased.

“Oh? You think a Baron spy will be able to create a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months?” Yisha’s face was expressionless.

Hearing Yisha say this, the other Kings stared at her with wide eyes.

“Generate a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months? Really?” Moon Wheel King asked, stumbling slightly over the question.

“What is the problem?” Yisha responded.

“I have no problem with that. If he can accomplish that in three months, then I will believe he is a real genius,” Night River King slowly said, as he sat down.

It sounded like complete lunacy. It was silly, to think of generating a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months. Across the history of the Rebate, no one had managed anything like that.

Night River King did not believe Han Sen could do it, as Teeth Knife was exclusive to the Rebate. Even among the Rebate, it was rare. The only person who had mastered the skill was Yisha, and you couldn't cheat your way to learn it.

The Kings were mollified. If Han Sen could generate a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months, then practicing Touching Flower Finger with such proficiency would make a lot more sense.

"If we can confirm Han Sen is legit, and he really is a true genius, should we give him a bit of a reputation? His identity should allow him to become a member of Moon Garden. He did make us proud in this event, after all. If we still don't let him in, the outsiders in Narrow Moon will become suspicious of us," Black Moon King said.

"If he can generate a Teeth Knife knifemind in three months, I would be willing to make him a teacher in the Moon Garden," Night River King said grimly.

Black Moon King smiled at Night River King, then turned his gaze across the table.

"Moon Wheel King, what do you think?"

"If he is legit, and he really is that talented, he should definitely be a member of Moon Garden," Moon Wheel King said.

"If everyone has no problem with this, then we shall all reconvene in three months." Yisha stood up and left the Full Moon meeting room.

Lu Xiaomei was walking down the street. The dark circles under her eyes were heavy, and she kept rubbing her head. Ever since Han Bao'er had entered her school, she had begun to feel like she was drowning.

She was a kindergarten teacher. Before Bao'er, she had dealt with kids crying, not wanting to go to school, and things like that. But now, going to work was like walking into hell itself. If her job hadn't paid well, she would have quit a long time ago to escape having to deal with the monster that resided there.

“I can’t do it anymore. I am going to die! Today is supposed to be a holiday, and so I should treat myself with a day at the spa. And buy myself a nice gift! Ever since that little witch arrived, I look ten years older.” Lu Xiaomei walked into a high-class female club. She swiped her card as she walked through the door. “I really do need to treat myself better. I can just eat nutrient fluids for the month to make up for what I spend today.”

After she entered the place, the attendants served her with passion. She felt as if she had ascended in society, taking the place of royalty.

“This is my life. Finally, I don’t have to worry about that monster.” Lu Xiaomei wrapped a bathrobe around herself and lay down to wait for her masseuse.

“Miss Lu,” a voice sounded in her ear. It made her muscles freeze. She jumped up and frantically looked around. She didn’t see anyone there, so she felt relieved. She lay back down on the bed and said to herself, “I am starting to hallucinate. Clearly, I am far too stressed out. Maybe I’ll go shopping today, too. That should help.”

After lying back down, Lu Xiaomei turned over, and there was a pretty little girl next to her, smiling.

“Miss Lu, what stores are you going to?”

You... you... why are you here!” Lu Xiaomei looked like she had just seen a ghost. She jumped up and pointed at the girl. “I own this club. Did you not know that?” Bao’er shook her head.

Lu Xiaomei’s eyes opened wide. “You own this place?”

“Yes. I have thirty-one branches of this establishment, all across the city.” Bao’er spoke with innocence.

“This b*tch is showing off again...” Lu Xiaomei felt both jealous and depressed. She was really hoping Bao’er would disappear right now.

But an evil expression crossed Bao'er's face, and she said, "By the way, I am going to the VIP area for a session. Would you like to come?"

"Can I?" Lu Xiaomei was quite shocked. It was a very expensive place, and she could only come here once a month. For half a month, she would have to eat nutrient fluid just to compensate for how much that place cost. The VIP area was a place you couldn't easily go to—even if you had a lot of money. She wanted to go, but non-VIPs weren't allowed.

"Of course, if you want. I can ask the manager to provide you with a VIP card." Bao'er smiled.

Chapter 1906 - Hopeless

Chapter 1906 Hopeless

“This is the life a woman should have. I’ve wasted my life; I should have gotten rich instead.” Lu Xiaomei was as pretty as the next snobbish woman. She was reveling in the high-tier service, and she was almost in tears.

Bao’er called for a high-class massage, food, and drinks she had never tried before. She showed Lu Xiaomei what it felt like to be royalty.

This little witch can actually be quite cute. It is only just a kid, after all. Perhaps the creature is innocent, at times,” Lu Xiaomei thought. She observed Bao’er as she sipped on a drink.

“Miss Lu, are you enjoying this service?” Bao’er was holding onto a bottle of juice as she sipped it with a straw.

“Yes, I love it! This place is great. Your family has very good taste.” Lu Xiaomei had another sip of wine and felt so good.

“I am glad you like it. You can come whenever you like.” Bao’er smiled.

“Really?” Lu Xiaomei’s eyes looked bright.

“Of course. I have already prepared a VIP card for you.” Bao’er clicked her fingers.

Quickly, a waitress rushed over with a plate. She walked in front of Lu Xiaomei and put down the dish. Politely, she told her, “Miss Lu, this is your very own VIP card.”

Lu Xiaomei accepted the card, then saw a bill. The waitress said, “And yes, this your bill for the day’s services.”

“A bill?” Lu Xiaomei’s face stiffened. When she looked at the bill, she almost fainted. She couldn’t even pronounce the sum, but with all the numbers, she knew it was more than exorbitant.

The muscles in Lu Xiaomei’s face twitched. She looked to be in a far worse state than someone crying their eyes out. “Bao’er, you gave me all this! Wasn’t this all a treat on you?”

Bao’er’s eyes opened wide, and she said with shock, “I am just a kid! I don’t have any money. I asked if this was what you wanted, and you said yes. You had me order all this.”

“D*mn! This little thing must be doing all of this on purpose!” Lu Xiaomei almost coughed up blood. Bao’er’s cute face had turned into a demon mask.

“I don’t care! I didn’t order all this. I am not paying.” Lu Xiaomei jumped up.

“What are you saying? You’re not paying?” Bao’er looked at Lu Xiaomei with shock.

Lu Xiaomei wished to say there was nothing Bao’er could do but pay it herself, when all of a sudden, two eight-foot-tall women stepped into the room. They stood in front of her.

Lu Xiaomei looked at their beefy arms and hastily took back her words. She replaced them by saying, “I don’t have enough money to afford this.”

“That’s okay. You are my teacher. So, why don’t you sign this paper, and then we can make this bill all go away.” Bao’er smiled and pulled a contract out of her little bag. She put it in front of her teacher, as if this was all going according to a scheme she had already planned out.

“D*mn! She prepared for this.” Lu Xiaomei was grinding her teeth as she looked down at the contract.

It was a contract that required her to relinquish her very self. There were more than one hundred unfair terms on the contract, and if she signed it, she would be wholly owned by Bao’er.

“I am not signing this, even if you kill me!” Lu Xiaomei said through gritted teeth.

Bao'er smiled. “Miss Lu, what are you talking about? I have a decent club, and I won't hit you. But the stuff you have just enjoyed, the gambling you've done, even the look on your face when shopping... It has all been recorded. You like the teacher Mister Luo, don't you? He's handsome and rich, yes? He is even chasing you, you know. I'm thinking I should show him all the footage, and present him with your unpaid bill. The elegant image you have been clinging onto for so long will be gone with the wind. Think about that for a moment, and then reconsider whether or not you wish to sign this.”

“Hellspawn! You are hellspawn! The stuff you have is so expensive. A cup of wine costs thirty thousand! This is a scam!”

“The luxuries you have been enjoying were all imported from other planets. They are the best of the best, and some of them were even shura delicacies. Of course they are not cheap. If you'd like, you can check the prices on Skynet. If you happen to find that our prices are too high, we will certainly price-match.” Bao'er smiled.

Lu Xiaomei struggled a bit. She signed the contract because of the handsome Mister Luo. Then she started to cry. Bao'er patted her on the shoulder and said, “Don't worry. Work for me for fifty years, and you'll have paid off your debt. The contract will also be erased at that point.”

It would have been better if Bao'er hadn't said anything. Now the woman really wanted to cry.

Lu Xiaomei began walking out of the club. Fortunately, Bao'er had already arranged for an aircraft to come and pick her up. If she hadn't, she wouldn't have had the money to get home. Everything she had belonged to Bao'er now.

“You've gone off course. You should go to the Eastern Lake,” Lu Xiaomei said.

“I'm sorry, who's driving this aircraft again?” the driver asked snarkily, looking at her through his sunglasses.

Lu Xiaomei was furious. “Yeah, you are just the driver! Let me out so I can walk home.”

“Sure.” The driver stopped the aircraft and landed.

Lu Xiaomei got off the aircraft and kicked the door closed. She said, “You are all bad people! This karma will come back to bite you one day.”

She turned and left. She eventually saw a familiar form walking nearby. It was her Prince Charming. It was Mister Luo.

“After having bad luck for so long, finally, something good! My Prince Charming, here I come!” Lu Xiaomei walked towards Luo Yushu.

But just as she was about to greet him, she saw the woman with him. The woman was dressed sexily and holding his arm. She leaned close to him.

“Luo Yushu, who is this woman?” Lu Xiaomei was so angry that she didn’t even care about maintaining her image. She grabbed his arm and pointed at the woman.

Luo Yushu was shocked. The woman then said, “Luo Yushu, who is this woman?”

Luo Yushu’s face changed, and he pushed Lu Xiaomei away. He explained to the woman, “Honey, listen to me. She works in the kindergarten with me. She keeps hounding me for my love, despite me constantly pushing her away. She has never stopped, and even now, she follows me around.”

“Luo Yushu, what are you saying?” Lu Xiaomei was so angry. He was the one who kept chasing her, and she couldn’t believe what he was now saying.

The woman looked at Lu Xiaomei, rolled her eyes, and said, “You are just a teacher! And yet, you want to steal a man away from someone like me? Are you crazy? I can give this man pocket money, the likes of which you will never earn in your lifetime. Maybe when I grow tired of him, you’ll get your chance.”

After that, the woman walked forward and pushed Lu Xiaomei back. She kept herself from falling, but she still dropped everything she was holding in her hands.

“Apologize to me, and then pick everything up.” Lu Xiaomei was so angry, she wanted to throttle the woman.

“Are you crazy? Get lost! I told you I am not interested in you.” Luo Yushu looked annoyed, and he also pushed her. He did not want her to hurt the woman he was currently with.

When Luo Yushu pushed her, Lu Xiaomei fell back with nothing but anger and hopelessness.

Suddenly, an arm grabbed her waist. It steadied her shoulders, then her body.

She opened her eyes and realized it was the driver with sunglasses.

She wished to say something, but the sky suddenly drew her attention. Many aircraft were suddenly headed towards them. In a minute, the vehicles had parked all around them, making the place very crowded.

Many men, dressed in black with sunglasses, got out of their vehicles. They looked like gangsters as they gathered around.

“What are you people here for? What do you want?” The woman and Luo Yushu began stepping back.

Lu Xiaomei looked at the aircraft around them: King, Steel, Silver, Ghost, Starry, Star, Miracle. They were all special editions that not just anyone could buy. Having a single one of them meant you were one of the super rich elite.

Now that there were so many of them there, the woman and Luo Yushu were frozen. The men looked intimidating in their black clothes and sunglasses. It made the couple’s legs grow soft.

The men dressed in black ignored the woman and Luo Yushu. They all walked in front of Lu Xiaomei and said, “Second Lady.”

Luo Yushu and the woman widened their eyes as if they had seen a ghost. They could barely stand on their feet.

Lu Xiaomei was just as dazed, too. She had no clue what was going on.

“Second Lady, Miss Bao’er asked us to come and pick you up,” the driver said to Lu Xiaomei. And then, he looked at the woman and Luo Yushu and said, “Did these two bully you? I can kill them for you, if you’d like.”

“Sorry, I didn’t mean to do that! I will pick the stuff up. Please forgive me!” The woman’s legs were wobbling, and she raced to collect all the items Yu Xiaomei had dropped.

“She forced me, Xiaomei. I did this for our future together,” Luo Yushu said.

“Go to hell!” Lu Xiaomei grabbed her bag and smacked him in the face with it. He hit the deck, so she went ahead and kicked him in the nuts. He writhed and screamed in pain.

The woman saw Lu Xiaomei looking back at her next. She slapped herself.

Pat! Pat! “It’s my fault. Please forgive me!”

“Let’s go.” Lu Xiaomei gritted her teeth, and no longer paid them heed.

The driver opened the door to the aircraft, and there, Lu Xiaomei saw Bao’er. She cried and went over to hold her, saying, “Bao’er...”

“Don’t cry.” Bao’er stroked her head and tried to comfort her.

“Thank you, Bao’er!” Lu Xiaomei couldn’t help but cry a little. She did her best to hold back her tears and look at the child with gratefulness.

You are welcome. I used two hundred and twenty-three aircraft to help you. The fuel for each comes to a sum of around seventy-eight thousand. With the wages for the drivers, and the damage..." Bao'er fiddled with a calculator and whipped out another contract.

"Hellspawn! You hellspawn!" The aircraft echoed with Lu Xiaomei's screams.

Chapter 1907 - Strange Mountain

Chapter 1907 Strange Mountain

Han Sen planned to practice in the mountains. He didn't need to practice Teeth Knife, but there were too many spies occupying the base. If Han Sen stayed there without practicing, people might grow suspicious.

So, Han Sen headed into the mountains to train. But instead of practicing Teeth Knife as he had told everyone, he began to work on the Dongxuan Sutra.

His Mutant Blood and Jadeskin had reached Viscount class, but the Dongxuan Sutra and The Story of Genes hadn't. The Story of Genes couldn't be leveled up through mere practice, so he could only focus on the Dongxuan Sutra for now.

Han Sen didn't take anyone with him this time. He planned to push himself hard in order to breakthrough, which would make it dangerous to have others around him.

Fortunately, there were many resources on Planet Eclipse. Xie Qing King and others could venture out and hunt xenogeneics on their own. The people he had brought over from the sanctuaries could eat xenogenic genes and use beast souls, so they leveled up faster than the people in the geno universe.

“Xenogenic Gene Eaten; Iron Wolf; Viscount Gene +1.”

Han Sen gobbled up some xenogenic meat, and his Viscount xenogenic gene tally increased. When one of his bodies became Viscount, he could increase that gene tally. Baron xenogenic genes were currently useless for him. He had to eat Viscount materials exclusively now.

Killing Viscount xenogeneics was an easy task for Han Sen, and his Viscount genes were increasing quickly.

After six days of travel, Han Sen found himself more than a thousand miles deep into the mountains. He met strong Marquise creatures, but he was able to run away with the rabbit shoes. Overall, the venture wasn't too dangerous.

"What is this?" As Han Sen treaded along a path, he spied the presence of a strange mountain.

The weather on Planet Eclipse wasn't great. There was no grass growing, and so all the mountains were barren and rocky.

The mountain in front of him was very green, though. Trees were growing all over it. There were flowers, and some of the plants even possessed fruit.

There were birds and insects on this mountain. They were far away, but Han Sen could feel their lifeforce.

"Planet Eclipse has a mountain like this?" Han Sen thought it was weird. He examined the surrounding area and realized that it was the only mountain like this in the region.

Han Sen carefully approached it. There had to be a reason why it was so luscious. Perhaps there was a treasure or something; that thought prompted Han Sen to have a look around.

Han Sen trekked to the mountain. While he noticed that there were a large collection of lifeforces coming from the mountain, he could tell that the birds and the trees were completely normal. There didn't seem to be any xenogeneics, either.

"Weird. Xenogeneic plants are difficult to grow on this planet, and even xenogeneic creatures often have trouble surviving. And yet, how are these all alive? Especially since they seem so ordinary." Han Sen was quite curious about this anomaly.

Han Sen kept walking up the mountain, and the foliage was just as lovely as it had appeared from a distance. Normal plants and creatures were spread out all across the mountain, as if the entire mountain had been transplanted to Planet Eclipse.

After an hour, Han Sen was able to reach the peak. He was quite shocked by the view he now saw, though.

Atop the mountain, amidst a small grove of trees, there was an emerald field. A wooden house stood there, and it looked very old.

“Is anyone there?” Han Sen called out to the occupied house. He thought it was a strange thing to find, and so he thought to himself, “Who could build a house in a place like this?”

Han Sen shouted again, but he received no response. So, he walked to the house because the windows were open. He wanted to take a look at what was inside from there.

The decorations of the interior were simple and rustic. They were all comprised of wood, and the primary features were a table and bed. Even the teapot and the plates were made of wood. It looked as if the people there used wood to build everything.

The wood was not big, though. You could see it all in one eye. There was a room at the back of the house, too, but you could not see it from outside.

“Is anyone in here?” Han Sen asked. He received no response. So, he pushed open the door and it swung forward. A lock hadn’t been fixed on it.

Han Sen walked inside and poked around. There didn’t seem to be anything worth examining, so he decided to check out the back room.

Han Sen opened the door and froze. All of a sudden, he found a person standing next to the bed. They were facing Han Sen with their eyes open.

“I am sorry. I called from the outside, and I believed this place was empty.” Han Sen explained, but his words were met with awkward silence. Something was giving him pause.

That was because the person next to the bed was a man: a human.

The man stood where he was and did not move. He didn’t even look at Han Sen.

“Excuse me...” Han Sen looked at the man and spoke carefully. He wanted to know what he was, and why there might be a human there.

But Han Sen did not know for sure that the man was a human. He could have been a crystallizer, forgotten long ago.

Han Sen asked him a few questions, and each time he received no response. Han Sen would have thought the man was dead if not for his lifeforce.

“My name is Han Sen. What is yours?”

When Han Sen said that, the man suddenly moved. He put a finger in front of his lips, like a gesture to indicate he should be quiet. The man did not appear hostile, and that brought Han Sen much relief. He stopped talking and just watched the man.

The man continued standing there for a whole hour, without saying as much as a single word. He looked more like a statue than a living being.

“Is he practicing, maybe? Hmm, but it doesn’t look like it.” Han Sen felt very confused, but also very curious. He sat on a chair to watch the man and see what he’d do.

But ten hours went by, and still, the man did not budge.

“Friend, can we talk?” Han Sen could not wait any longer.

“Ssh!” The man gestured for silence again.

Han Sen’s heart sank. He hadn’t a clue what he was doing. He couldn’t ask anything, as the man kept hushing him.

Han Sen looked around the room and noticed that it was all rustic, just like the rest of the house. Han Sen looked at a table and found something that was actually not made of wood. There was paper, alongside a stack of books.

“Friend, can I check this out?” Han Sen walked before the table and glanced over the books. There was a diary with many words scrawled on it.

But Han Sen didn't begin reading immediately. He still wanted to ask the man for permission.

The man looked very nervous, and he performed the ssh gesture again.

“If you don't object, then I'll assume you are agreeing.” Han Sen went ahead to read the contents of the diary.

Chapter 1908 - Crystallizer

Chapter 1908 Crystallizer

Quickly, Han Sen noticed he was able to read the text contained within the diary. It was written in the ancient language of humans—a text often used by the crystallizers. There were, however, a variety of symbols not even he could understand. All-in-all, he didn't understand everything together.

There were some formulas jotted down. Han Sen wasn't very good at science. He had learned a bit in school, but he had forgotten most of that by now.

But Han Sen was still able to tell he had never seen these formulas before. They were extremely complicated. Judging from the content of the book, the man had been trying to calculate something.

Han Sen flicked through the pages of the book, and the man showed no reaction. As long as Han Sen made no noise, the man didn't mind his presence there. That's how it seemed, leastways.

When the man didn't object to Han Sen's behavior, it made Han Sen feel safe enough to relax a little. So, he continued reading the diary. It must have been a draft of sorts. There were many random things jotted down.

However, there were enough words and symbols that Han Sen did not understand to make the book unintelligible.

Han Sen put the diary down and took a gander at the other books. They all seemed to concern themselves with science. There were ones based on quantum theory. Han Sen knew he would not understand those books.

Since the books were in messy disarray, Han Sen decided to tidy them up. By doing that, he also hoped to find a book he might enjoy. And soon after, his breath caught. He saw a book titled The Story of Genes.

This was what Han Sen had retrieved from the Main Control Room of the crystallizers. Ever since that time, he hadn't found a single thing associated with the book.

Not even Stay Up Late knew where The Story of Genes came from. He read it, shook his head, and thought it must be a prank. No one could use The Story of Genes, or even practice it. It was not something any creature could learn.

Han Sen had never expected that he would find another copy in a place like this.

“Perhaps it is just a coincidence. Maybe the title is the same, but it's not actually the same book.” Han Sen tried to regather the composure of his thoughts, and then, flipped the book open.

When he read the first line, he knew he had not been mistaken. This was indeed another copy of The Story of Genes. It was exactly the same.

Han Sen kept reading the content, and word for word, it was the same.

Aside from the standard content, there were actually many notes explaining things. But they weren't related to how you'd actually practice with the text. The notes were of a scientific nature.

Han Sen read it all seriously, right up until he reached the end.

The content, from back to front, was the same as his own The Story of Genes. There was, however, an additional page. That page had nothing to do with how to practice the work, though. It was a summary.

The summary used an extensive vocabulary. Han Sen did not understand what was written until he reached the final line. It said the test had failed.

There was something else he understood, too. “Cannot figure out the requirements for practice. The Story of Genes theory does not make sense. Can I not create a god?”

“Is this guy the creator of The Story of Genes?” Han Sen looked back at the man strangely.

The man was dressed in ordinary garments, but they were in tatters. He stood motionless, like a mannequin. He was focused, as if he was trying to hear something.

Han Sen had something he wished to ask, but he knew that if he tried to ask anything, the man would simply tell him to be quiet.

Han Sen kept sorting through the books on the table. There were books on many different subjects, from genes to quantum theory. Overall, Han Sen could not understand much.

After Han Sen tidied up the books, he decided to sit and observe the man. The man really wasn't moving, and he was unsure how long the man could do this.

Han Sen had almost fallen asleep when the man finally moved. He walked gently towards the table, looked down at Han Sen, and said, “Who are you? Why have you come here?”

“I am Han Sen. What's your name?” Han Sen asked happily.

“Run, or it will be too late for you to escape.” The man looked annoyed.

“What does that mean?” Han Sen felt a chill, and he thought the man might try to fight him.

“You don't know that you are on a spirit's body. If it moves, it will travel through space,” the man explained.

“You mean the mountain is a creature?” Han Sen asked with shock.

“What is so weird about that? There is plenty of life in this world,” the man said.

“It’s a mountain. How can a mountain have life? There are other creatures like birds and worms on this mountain,” Han Sen said.

The man looked at him with disdain. “You have so many bacteria and parasites on you. Does the fact that they have life mean that you do not?”

“But I am a living thing. The mountain is just a rock,” Han Sen said.

“Who said rocks cannot possess life? It’s like a piece of meat. You wouldn’t say it is living, but it is a part of life,” the man said.

“It’s not like that. If the rock is like flesh, then why are we able to create mines? And why does the life of rock not resist? Like us; if someone was digging into our flesh, we’d want to kill whoever was assaulting us,” Han Sen asked.

The man laughed. “It’s because we are too fast!”

“Too fast?” Han Sen froze, unsure of what he meant.

The man explained. “The rock lives longer than we do. A billion years might only be a moment for them. Even if we do dig into its body, the rock might not even have the time to notice our presence. It cannot see what we do.”

Han Sen was frozen. He had never thought of things this way before.

The man looked at Han Sen. “You said we would kill anyone who harms, yes? But things aren’t like that. What if we grow a sickness like cancer? It destroys our bodies, but often, we can’t root out the thing that is killing us. When these things harm your body, you cannot do anything. Just like the rock is unable to do things about us.”

“This is just a simple way for me to explain these things. The truth of such matters is far more complicated. If you are interested in learning more, read this. You will understand far better.” The man gave Han Sen a book.

“My scientific background is pretty bad. I might not understand.” Han Sen felt awful saying this.

The man said, “Scientific research is all about simplifying the complicated things. You can let those other fools worry about science itself. This is a geno art I created, through the theory of rock creatures. Ordinary crystallizers can practice it.”

Han Sen wished to say something, but the man looked outside and the spoke again. He said, “You should leave now. The spirit is going to move. Unless you want to travel far away with me, that is.”

Chapter 1909 - Petrify

Chapter 1909 Petrify

Han Sen started running out of the lodge. The man might be lying, but it was better to run than risking everything by remaining. If Han Sen was transported to another star system, that'd be pretty bad.

When he made it some distance away, Han Sen turned around to face the man and ask, "What is your name?"

"Left Crazy," the man answered.

Han Sen wished to ask something more, but he felt the mountain begin to shake. Without hesitation, he said goodbye and hastily departed the mountain.

Boom!

With the speed of his rabbit shoes aiding his flight, Han Sen was able to just about get off the mountain before hearing that deafening sound. The mountains all around were vibrating like mad, and when Han Sen turned back around to face where the mountain had been, he saw nothing. It was as if the mountain did not exist.

"How did that mountain move so quickly? I thought the man said that rocks were slow." Cold sweat dripped off Han Sen's forehead. It was fortunate he had moved as fast as he had. If he hadn't, he'd have been long gone.

Han Sen took a gander at the book he had been given by Left Crazy. There was no name, and it had all been written by hand.

"Petrify? That sounds so lame. It sounds like a skill that can make your skin as hard as stone," Han Sen thought, as he started to read the text.

But as he read, his expression turned to surprise. The skill was called petrify, and while the name was lame, the contents were impressive.

It was a complete geno art. From commoner to Baron, from Viscount to King, all could practice and become proficient with it. It had its own power.

Practicing Petrify did not make your body harder, though. It would just make your body closer to that of the rocky creatures. Grystallizers were like hurrmins, so they could become like rocks completely. “The higher your petrification was, the closer to the life of a rock you’d attune.

You wouldn’t become completely the same as a rock, you’d only adopt some of their attributes. Petrify made humans and crystallizers petrified. It gave them the life of a rock.

Petrify couldn’t make someone impervious to death, but time had more difficulty leaving its marks on petrified bodies. Thousands of years result in many humans and crystallizers dying, but to a rock, it was only a moment. It did not affect them.

Han Sen examined the requirements for bringing Petrify up to King class, if that was what he chose to do. At that point, he would have a life that was very similar to a rock’s. And with a body like that, many millions of years could come and go without affecting him.

There was one significant flaw to Petrify, though. When you used it, your body really would turn to stone. You’d be unable to move because of it. And your mind would still be there, active, too. The more you practiced the skill, the closer to the life of a rock you would get.

“It sounds really cool, but it seems fairly useless. You’d only turn into a rock, and rocks aren’t hard enough to provide great protection. And you can’t move, either. Why would that guy bother creating this skill?” Han Sen thought to himself.

After a while, Han Sen was able to come up with a useful application for it.

“If I can practice while petrified, then time would be of no issue for me. I could just keep practicing without eating or drinking.”

In that case, Petrify might be really useful. He planned to learn it, thinking it might come in handy.

Petrify was a geno art that allowed for the swapping of genes. It did not make your body better. You still needed a strength like The Story of Gene as a basis.

Han Sen thought it was a crystallizer geno art, so he used The Story of Genes to practice with it.

Han Sen found a safe cave to take refuge in, where he could practice Petrify. It was easier to learn than he expected. After casting it once, his skin started to feel rocky. Already, Han Sen could tell that he had learned the first tier of Petrify.

“Hmm, that was much easier than I thought it’d be.” Han Sen then moved on to try the second tier. It was a Baron class Petrify.

Han Sen finished Baron Petrify easily, too. He kept on going, and he realized that Petrify really was exceptionally easy to learn. He only spent two days practicing with it to get it all the way up to King class.

After reaching King class, he noticed Left Crazy had not written anything more. That was likely due to the fact he had yet to reach that level. He guessed that after the King level, you could actually become petrified.

Without a skill that would teach him how to proceed, Han Sen decided to try other things.

If he became a rock and was unable to return to a human form, then his life would be over.

“Why is it like that? According to Left Crazy, you had to reach a certain level before practicing such a skill. So, why did nothing stop him from reaching King class? Is it because

of The Story of Genes?” Han Sen guessed a number of things, but he wasn’t sure enough to put stock in anything.

Han Sen tried using his Petrify, and he learned other geno arts could not be practiced as long as it was in use. That was because Petrify made a big change to the body. Geno arts for the human body were useless. Only The Story of Genes could run while he was in a petrified state.

“This geno art is so weird. Although it can take you to a very high level, its usefulness is practically nonexistent.” Losing interest in Petrify, Han Sen decided to return to practicing with the Dongxuan Sutra.

Han Sen remained in the mountains for an entire month. He fought and practiced with his Dongxuan Sutra a great amount. Dongxuan Sutra was on the precipice of breaking through, but it had yet to do so.

There were ten days left before the red mist spring erupted. After realizing this, Han Sen decided it was time to leave the mountains and head to the spring. His Spell Geno Armament required this spring so it could become a Viscount. He couldn’t afford to miss this opportunity.

Before long, Han Sen was right outside Red Mist Valley. There were hordes of xenogeneics wandering around, and it was clear they had all come there for the red mist spring, as well.

They all hung outside the valley. None of them had entered the mist yet. They were waiting for the spring to erupt.

Han Sen looked around. The xenogeneics there were Baron or Viscount. There were no higher level sorts.

Yisha told Han Sen that the red mist spring only worked for Viscounts. It would be ineffective on those of a higher level, so, there was no point in high class xenogeneics coming.

Chapter 1910 - Green Ligh

Chapter 1910 Green Ligh

Han Sen found a hidden place in Red Mist Valley. He was going to wait for the spring to burst.

He also hunted down many of the Viscount creatures that were around, in order to collect their materials and genes.

There were three or four days left now, according to the schedule Yisha had proposed. And over the course of those next few days, more and more creatures gathered. Han Sen guessed that there had to be around ten thousand in total, with most of them being Viscount. It was fortunate that no creature of a higher tier had come. If they had, Han Sen could not have guaranteed that he would be the one to benefit from the spring.

Perhaps because they were all too greedy in their desire for the spring, many of the creatures fought against each other. He had never seen so much conflict before.

As Han Sen was watching those xenogeneics fighting outside the valley, he eventually caught sight of a few xenogeneics retreating. They abandoned their position. It seemed as if something strong was coming.

“It can’t be a higher class xenogenic, can it?” Han Sen was shocked. He looked that way.

But there were too many xenogeneics there. Many were two meters tall, and they obscured Han Sen’s vision. He couldn’t see whatever was coming.

Han Sen looked around and stayed close to the wall. He wanted to scale it and get a better looked.

There was a dark green centipede. Each part of its body gleamed with jewel-like eyes as it skittered across the earth. Every xenogeneic in its path backed off as soon as they saw it. None dared to stay within twenty meters of the creature.

The xenogeneic was ten meters long, but it wasn't tall. Its body was only half a meter off the ground. That was why Han Sen had such difficulty trying to spot it.

Han Sen watched it for quite some time, and he didn't think it was all-that high level. It should have been no better than a Viscount, so it was weird to see the fear with which so many xenogeneics regarded it.

Quickly, the centipede xenogeneic reached the entrance of the valley. It was different from the other xenogeneics, and it crawled right into the valley.

Han Sen was shocked. Yisha said that the red mist spring was good for xenogeneics. It could speed up their evolution, but the red mist itself was harmful by comparison. Until the spring was ready, the mist remained there. So, it was most wise to avoid the mist until then.

But the centipede climbed straight into the valley, and it did so without getting harmed by the mist.

"No! I have got to find that centipede. If it is going towards the spring, it might be able to swallow it the moment it opens up. I'll lose my own opportunity!" Han Sen frowned.

He hadn't thought the centipede was going to climb down into the valley. And now that it was in there, it would be extremely difficult to find the creature. You couldn't even see your own hand in front of you, that mist was so thick. Trying to find the centipede would be difficult.

"I'll have to try. Luckily, it is just a Viscount xenogeneic. It cannot be that large of a threat." Han Sen donned his Marquise armor and the rabbit shoes. He flew past the heads of the xenogeneics and headed straight into the valley.

Just like before, the mist stifled Han Sen's senses. It was as if he was deaf and blind.

Han Sen searched through the mist, hoping to find the centipede xenogeneic.

The valley was massive, and there were still a few days to go before the spring was supposed to erupt. Han Sen thought he'd be able to find the centipede.

Han Sen walked more quickly through the mist, but he did not dare go too fast. If he ran into a rock wall and injured himself, he'd become a joke.

Due to him being unable to see, though, he tried hugging the walls as he went. Once he had canvased the area that way, he maintained a steady distance from the wall and went along them again.

After searching the place like a neatly-fitted carpet, he hadn't caught sight of the centipede. Eight hours had elapsed by now.

"That xenogeneic was rather large. It shouldn't be too difficult to find. Why am I so unlucky?" Han Sen felt depressed.

Han Sen walked into the deepest recesses of the valley, and when he reached the far wall, he wished to turn back. But that wall felt different from the others.

Han Sen kept running his hands over it, and eventually, he realized there was a space next to it. It was a cave.

Han Sen thought he was adequately protected, with the Marquise armor and the rabbit shoes, so he entered the cave.

After entering, Han Sen's eyes gleamed brightly. The red mist was gone, and he could see all that resided in the cave.

The red mist was like a fire burning behind him. It lit up the cave. The cave did not have any of the mist inside, though. All of Han Sen's senses had returned.

Han Sen looked deeper into the cave, and when he did, something made him quite happy. The giant centipede was inside there.

“Does the spring reside in this cave? No way. Yisha said the spring would have a darker mist. How can there be none at all?” Han Sen thought. He didn’t stop moving, though, and he planned to get rid of the centipede, just in case.

It looked like that xenogeneic was a very sensitive creature, though. It detected Han Sen’s presence quickly, and so it turned around and used its jewel-like eyes to look at him.

Boom!

As this occurred, the jewel-like eyes shone with a green light.

The green light was too bright, especially for a cave that was so small. It blinded the entire cave with that channel of light, prompting Han Sen to run forward.

“It’s lucky I have this Marquise armor. A light like this looks Viscount level at the lowest,” Han Sen thought to himself. He drew his Ghost Teeth Knife, and with his ice powers and blood, he cut towards the light.

Ghost Teeth Knife sliced through the green light. The light had a tangible presence, and it filled up the entire area. When it landed on Han Sen, he himself turned green.

Han Sen then realized he could no longer move. It was as if he had been stopped by a strange power. He was stuck in the same position, unable to move.

“Crap! There is something wrong with that light.” Han Sen was shocked. He hastily used his power, trying to break through the light that was snaring him. He wanted his freedom back.

Han Sen fired up Jadeskin, the Blood-Pulse Sutra, the Dongxuan Sutra, and The Story of Genes, but still, he was unable to escape the green light.

The centipede-like xenogeneic, with its jewel-like eyes focused on Han Sen, continued to pound him with green light.

Chapter 1911 - Sharpen

Chapter 1911 Sharpen

Han Sen's body could not move, and despite the fact that he still had control over his senses, he couldn't tell what element the green light was. He wasn't in a rush, though. The xenogeneic's power was amazing, but at the end of the day, it was only a Viscount. Han Sen had Marquise armor on, and that meant he had no reason to be afraid.

Plus, he had his super king spirit body to rely on. All things considered, Han Sen was feeling pretty secure.

When the centipede approached, Han Sen noticed that it was skittering around small orchid-like plants. There were no flowers atop them, but small shapes like gold rats grew from them.

No, they weren't rats. After a good look, Han Sen noticed it was something quite familiar. The things growing on the plants were very small Red Mist Minks.

There were seven of them, and their eyes all looked so big. They looked very spiritual, but even so, they all vibrated together in fear. Because their tails were grown into the plants, they could not run. They all looked so scared as they stared at the centipede.

Now, Han Sen knew that the centipede had come for the red mist spring. It had come for the minks. What Han Sen didn't know was who the creature was going to attack first.

The centipede quickly skittered up to Han Sen with its blade-like claws. It attacked Han Sen, making repeated ding dong noises. The claws were unable to break Han Sen's armor, but they left marks on its surface. That was very impressive for a Viscount class pair of claws.

The Viscount xenogeneic should have found it impossible to damage a Marquise armor.

This xenogeneic is a bit creepy.” But even so, Han Sen still felt safe. It was creepy, yes, but it could not harm him.

The centipede wreathed itself around Han Sen, trapping him in the grip of its body. Its feet were also like blades, and they kept scrabbling against him.

Fortunately, only a few white scratch marks were left on the armor. The attacks still couldn't damage him.

The creature did not have a mouth, and its head was very flat. It had two long beard-strands, too. Aside from the claws and the blade-like legs, there was no other way for it to attack Han Sen.

It kept slashing Han Sen for quite some time, but it was unable to hurt him. The centipede eventually gave up. It climbed over to the plants that were growing minks, instead.

It circled the minks, but it did not seem to hurt them.

But the minks were still frightened. They were shaking in fear.

“What is it trying to do?” Han Sen was confused, and so he resumed trying to break through the green light.

Jadeskin, his mutant blood, and The Story of Genes were all useless. When he cast his Dongxuan Sutra, he could sense something from the light. But it was just Baron class, and one level lower than the green light. He could not get it to break through.

Han Sen kept using his Dongxuan Sutra to battle the green light. He also watched the xenogeneic. He was interested in learning what it was up to.

As he fought the green light, Dongxuan Sutra's power flowed through him like it always did. But Han Sen felt as if the power was changing slightly. He felt as if he was on the precipice of breaking through.

Han Sen was so happy about this, seeing as he had used the Dongxuan Sutra to fight against the green light. He wanted the green light to sharpen the Dongxuan Sutra, and perhaps prompt a level-up.

Right now, the most effective thing about the Dongxuan Sutra was the Dongxuan Aura. Han Sen did not have the power to unleash Dongxuan Sutra-fueled skills. If he made it reach Viscount, he could cast attacks with the Dongxuan Sutra. Han Sen had been waiting for this moment for a very long time.

Han Sen kept using his Dongxuan Sutra to fight the green light, but it was one level lower. The power was being used up very quickly.

Han Sen could only take very minor breaks. Whenever he regained some of his power, he'd get right back into fighting.

After two hours of this, the cave was shining with red light. Some of the mist had drifted into the cave like a river. The entire cave was full of this red mist now.

As Han Sen wondered why the red mist was coming in, he realized that the red mist in the cave had begun reducing.

The red mist was flowing as if it was being blown away by a fan. It didn't exit the cave, though. So, Han Sen had a peep at where the red mist was going. It was seeping into the plants with the red minks.

After half an hour, the red mist had become very thin. It no longer hindered Han Sen's senses.

The plants that absorbed the mist were releasing a light. Especially the seven small minks. They looked so shiny, like little treasures. They looked very golden.

After the mist was absorbed by the plants, no more mist entered the cave. The shiny look on the plants and the minks began to dull.

Han Sen took a closer look, and he noticed that the fur of the minks was much fuller. Their eyes were brighter, too, and their lifeforce had grown stronger.

“That centipede must be waiting for the minks to grow. I wonder how much longer this might take?” Now Han Sen knew just what that xenogeneic wanted.

Han Sen kept using the Dongxuan Sutra to battle the green light. Every time Han Sen used up all his power in combat with the green light, his powers grew stronger as they recovered. It was a process that delighted him.

After a while, the mist entered the cave again. Just like last time, the plants absorbed it. And then, the minks grew bigger.

The third time the mist was absorbed, the mist was absorbed by the Red Mist Minks themselves. Han Sen’s body then moved. He lowered his Ghost Teeth Knife, which he had been holding in the air.

Han Sen could not break through the binding of the green light, but the Dongxuan Sutra’s power was starting to work. And he knew this because he could now move his body a minute amount.

The centipede sensed his movement, though. It turned around and shone many of its eyes at Han Sen. It increased the power of the chains it had locked around Han Sen, prohibiting him from moving any more.

The xenogeneic had not been able to hurt Han Sen, and he didn’t consider it much of a threat. So, Han Sen kept using the green light to practice with the Dongxuan Sutra. And over time, he developed a resistance to the green light.

On the twenty-third time the mist started pouring into the cave, the plants’ light was growing again. They were becoming brighter than the red mist. Amidst that heavy fog, the

outlines of the plants were visible, shining brightly. The seven plants each had a Red Mist Mink growing on them.

Chapter 1912 - This Is Unique

Chapter 1912 This Is Unique

On a planet of Narrow Moon, a Rebate mother was praying sincerely.

“God of the Rebate, please allow my child to evolve a second time, despite having already generated armor. I will give everything I have for this.” The mother’s face looked so sad.

She was Jade Duke’s wife. She had a son with Jade Duke. Both of their genes were exceptional, and their child should have absolutely become a Noble. But when her son generated a geno armor a few days ago, he did not evolve a second time. He became a commoner.

Even for a Duke, it was difficult to gather items to allow a second chance to evolve. Jade Duke didn’t have what was required. So, the son’s mother prayed to God, hoping for a miracle. They wanted him to evolve a second time, so they would not be laughed at.

Your sincerity has touched God. I can satisfy your wishes.” A god with gold-clothing appeared before the lady. It smiled strangely at her.

The news of Planet Eclipse possessing a red mist spring had spread, and the reports sounded true.

But without Knife Queen’s permission, no one was allowed to go to Planet Eclipse to find that spring. Despite that, the Narrow Moon factions kept pushing. Moon Wheel King gathered a few Kings together for a meeting in Full Moon. Knife Queen was present there, too.

“Knife, does Planet Eclipse have a red mist spring?” Night River King asked. He had a child that had not evolved a second time, as well.

“Yes,” Knife Queen said.

“Why did you not tell us sooner? We cannot allow Han Sen to lay claim to that treasure.” Night River King looked very angry.

It wasn't just Night River King feeling this way, either. The other Kings were all peeved, too. Their children, and the people who followed them, needed the spring, too. The Kings were here to represent all those who needed it.

Yisha coldly looked at Night River King and said, “Han Sen is my student. And don't forget that you were the one to give him Planet Eclipse, as a slight. Do you think you can just break the Narrow Moon laws to suit yourself?”

Night River King coughed and kept going. “We cannot break our laws, no. But Han Sen is still a suspicious individual. If we provide him this treasure and then discover he is a spy, we will suffer a grand loss. Don't you all agree?”

Yes. We shouldn't allow an outsider to receive such a treasure,” Flower King said.

Aside from Black-Moon King, all the other Kings shared the same opinion.

“Knife, we don't know how much is stored in that spring. If it isn't much, then it is fine. If it is a lot, we cannot allow a suspicious outsider to lay claim to it. Why don't we send someone to inspect how much is stored there? Then, we can fairly share the contents of the spring. We can save some for Han Sen. Does that suggestion not satisfy all our desires?” Moon Wheel King said.

This time, many of the other Kings agreed. They weren't greedy about the spring. The pressure was merely coming from their family members and other bad relationships.

“Han Sen is my student, and Planet Eclipse is bound to him legally.” Yisha spoke with an absence of emotion.

“Knife, why are you being so stubborn? He is just an outsider. And he is suspicious.” Night River King looked glum. He went on to say, “If you absolutely insist on this stance, then we'll take it to a vote. You know what will happen after that.”

Yisha looked at all of them and said, “Fine. You want the red mist spring so badly? You can bring ten members. No one above Viscount is allowed. How much they can claim will depend entirely on them. That is my bottom line on this matter.”

“Okay, deal,” Night River King agreed, and the other Kings did not have an opinion.

After Night River King returned to his planet, he rounded up the ten best Viscounts he could. He ordered them to collect as much of the red mist spring as they could.

“Sword Know, you can stay; I wish to talk with you,” Night River King said to a Viscount with a bird head and a human body.

Yes, My King?” Sword Know’s beady hawk eyes looked right at him when he spoke.

Night River King gave Sword Know a box and said, ‘You only need half a step to become Earl. This is a spirit orb that I have saved. With this orb, you should be able to become an Earl. Take it to Planet Eclipse and make yourself an Earl there. And of course, try to grab as much of the spring water as you can.’”

“Yes, My King. I will not disappoint you.” Sword Know accepted the spirit orb and looked pleased. He thanked Night River King.

With his skill, he only needed a spirit orb to become an Earl. There was no chance of him failing this. This saved him years of practicing.

All the factions sent their Viscounts to Planet Eclipse. A big battleship was headed straight for Mirror Lake.

“Narrow Moon is still not my Narrow Moon.” Inside the palace, Yisha watched the monitor with a gloomy look. She looked totally cold.

Han Sen was her student, and these people were going to steal and split up his spring. It made her incredibly angry.

She had done everything she could to prevent this, but if she had stubbornly forced them to take a vote, the end result would have been far worse. No one would take her corner.

“Deified... I need to be deified to be the absolute queen of the Rebate!” Yisha closed her eyes. The power inside her rumbled like thunder; it could have swallowed the skies.

Even as strong as Yisha was, she couldn't do anything right now. She wanted more power.

Inside the cave in the the Red Mist Valley, the red mist was sucked into a vortex. Then, it disappeared. It went into the plants.

The three little minks were like treasures. Their bodies were glowing so much, it was difficult to look at them directly.

The centipede was moving quickly towards the plants. It extended its head, cracked open its mouth, and tried to swallow one of the minks.

The glowing mink tried to run away in terror, but its tail was attached to the plant and it could not run.

Chapter 1913 - Dongxuan Sutra Level Up Super Gene

Chapter 1913 Dongxuan Sutra Level Up Super Gene

The centipede opened its mouth to eat the little mink. It suddenly stopped, though, and it turned to look behind itself. Tap! Tap! Tap!

Han Sen's body was jerking like a poorly-built robot as he slowly approached.

The centipede released a weird shriek. And then, the eyes on its back started shooting out more green light. Its body maneuvered into a semi-circle as it did this.

The green light landed on Han Sen like a spotlight.

But Han Sen's body still moved. He wasn't frozen in place this time. A second later, he was walking forward once again.

The centipede let out another strange scream. The green light burst forth from its eyes, shining powerfully across Han Sen, doing its best to hold him back.

Despite all that green light, however, Han Sen was still approaching the centipede. He didn't get stuck in place, and his pace was gradually increasing. As he drew closer, it became apparent that the green light wasn't actually hitting him. There was an invisible barrier around him that kept the green light three inches away from him.

That barrier, and the safety it provided, were expanding. It was like an invisible wall, blocking the green light and red mist from reaching him.

The centipede shrieked and continued firing rays of green light. They struck the barrier and immediately disappeared. It was useless now. And no matter how much green light the creature fired, nothing could change the tide.

Han Sen calmly watched the centipede as he walked forward. The barrier grew bigger and bigger, until the centipede was inside it.

The centipede felt the danger it was in, and so it twirled its body into a tighter defensive ball. The green, gem-like eyes were shining brightly.

Inside the invisible barrier, it could still use its powers, but the green light was twisted. The light would flash randomly around the inside of the barrier, but none could strike Han Sen.

Han Sen lifted Ghost Teeth Knife and cut the xenogeneic centipede in half.

“Viscount xenogeneic hunted: Evil-Eye Dragon. Xenogeneic Gene found.”

Han Sen thought that was a bit of a shame. He hadn't gotten a beast soul that wielded that wicked power. But even so, leveling up his Dongxuan Sutra through this battle was more than enough.

Tzi! Tzi!

The seven red mist minks squealed. They were shining. Their tails disconnected from the plants, setting them free. When the seven minks matured and fell off the plants, their anchors wilted and disintegrated into dust.

The creatures looked incredibly scared. And it was clear that they wished to escape.

Han Sen used his Dongxuan Aura to muffle their senses. Under his blinding powers, the seven Red Mist Minks ran around like headless chickens, unable to discern where the exit might be.

“Weird. It looks like these guys are really low level. They look Baron at best.” Han Sen found this to be quite strange. After being born in such an important place and absorbing so much red mist, how could they only be Barons?

Han Sen raised his hand, and the seven of them flew right before Han Sen. They couldn't escape.

Han Sen grabbed one of them to examine. They had gold hair and bodies that were the size of a fist. Their eyes were big and took up thirty percent of their faces. Their cheeks were plump balls, and their tails weren't too different from a squirrel's tail. They were big and fluffy things.

"It is a Baron. Weird." Continuing to stifle the senses of the seven minks with his Dongxuan Aura, Han Sen then walked over to the centipede. He broke its body and took out the emerald eyes.

The evil xenogeneic's evil eyes looked rather pretty. They were only the size of pigeon eggs, but they gleamed green like one of his grandmother's emeralds.

Han Sen dug out each of the eyes and readied himself to leave. The seven minks were eating the body of the centipede.

They were too small, and after eating a little, their stomachs were rounded and full. Their claws could barely even touch the ground.

Han Sen made them fly towards him, to tuck them into his satchel.

After leaving the cave, Han Sen expanded the effect of his Dongxuan Aura. And as Han Sen walked through the mist, it couldn't penetrate his barrier. It was ten meters wide by now, and Han Sen had no issue with stifled senses. He could see all things clearly.

With his Dongxuan Aura, Han Sen could search through the red mist with great ease. He searched the entire area, though, and was unable to find the spring.

"It looks like I will only be able to find it when the spring actually erupts," Han Sen thought to himself, as he headed for the valley entrance. He wanted to see if there were any more annoying enemies out there.

When he was beyond the valley's exit, he saw Xie Qing King surrounded by xenogeneics. He was fighting them like mad.

"Brother Qing, what are you doing here?" Han Sen walked straight out of the valley and asked him with shock.

The Rebate have sent many Viscounts here, saying a decision has been made. The spring is to be shared between everyone. Gu Qingcheng reviewed their documents and confirmed their legitimacy. Wang Yuhang is taking them around the mountains. I am here to inform you." Xie Qing King spoke all of this while he was still engaged in combat.

"How did they learn there is a red mist spring here?" Han Sen frowned.

Only Xie Qing King, Yisha, and the others knew about the spring. He trusted Xie Qing King and the others. If Yisha, of all people, had told him he should be the one to absorb the spring, then she certainly wouldn't have shared the information with anyone.

"Stop fighting. Let's take a look at what's going on." Han Sen and Xie Qing King left the area. The greedy xenogeneics wouldn't want to leave the valley, so they did not get chased. Xie Qing King gave Han Sen a document. After glancing over it, Han Sen said, "This has come from the elders, so it has to be legit."

Han Sen knew it was the truth, though. Otherwise, without Yisha's permission, the Viscounts would not have come. "Where are they now?" Han Sen asked.

"They are yelling at him about needing to be led to the spring. There are too many of them, and Gu Qingcheng is worried they might attack the base if their demands aren't met. She is worried the place will be messed up, and the women and the children could be hurt. So, Wang Yuhang is taking them around and around." Xie Qing King went on to say, "Should we let Wang Yuhang get rid of them? Take them to an area with powerful xenogeneics, to ensure they won't return?"

“This is an order from the elders. It is a decree that has been signed by seven Kings and Yisha herself. If I don’t take them to the red mist spring, I will be in trouble. I can’t tell Yisha that I got them all killed.” Han Sen looked over the document, smiled, and said, “If they want to come, let them.”

Chapter 1914 - Give Me Back My Stuff Super Gene

Chapter 1914 Give Me Back My Stuff Super Gene

“What is wrong with you? Where are you taking us?” One of the Viscounts looked at Wang Yuhang very angrily.

They’d been waylaid by many xenogeneics on the road, and they had yet to see any hint of the red mist spring. The many injuries they had suffered were taking a toll.

Except for Wang Yuhang, of course. He was leading them, and he could run from his enemies extremely quickly. Whenever he saw movement up ahead, he’d take cover in the crowd. He was the only one not to sustain injuries.

“Kid, I’m warning you. You better not be playing tricks on us. Even if Han Sen himself was here, he couldn’t save you.

We can kill you with the greatest of ease,” the Tego Viscount shouted angrily at Wang Yuhang, grabbing him by the collar.

“You have misunderstood me! Why would I play tricks? You know how dangerous this place is, and there is an abundance of xenogeneics. We don’t have many people in the base, either, so the mountains remain uncleared. I am taking a huge risk, leading you guys to the red mist spring. The fear of death is not lost upon me, either. I have picked the safest route for us to take, and even so, there really are just too many xenogeneics.” Wang Yuhang gave them the look of someone who had been wronged.

“Keep going.” The Tego Viscount grunted in dissatisfaction and threw Wang Yuhang forward.

Yes. And we have to be careful, because this place is dangerous.” Wang Yuhang smiled and got up. He wasn’t mad, and he just swept the dust off and kept moving.

As they walked, they went across a mountain, at which point Wang Yuhang suddenly started retreating. He also shouted, “Everyone! There is a bunch of xenogeneics ahead!”

Before any of them could react, they saw a bunch of xenogeneics crossing the distance. There were so many of them, it was like a sea of foes. One of them was wielding some sort of barrier, which marked it as an Earl xenogeneic.

The team quickly fell into chaos as the group of Viscounts engaged the xenogeneics. Wang Yuhang ran to the back of them, saying, “Trying to be bossy to me, huh? Now you are going to die!”

“Not bad, Little Uncle.” Han Sen suddenly appeared next to Wang Yuhang and smiled.

“What are you doing here? I told Brother Qing you could stay and absorb the spring while I handle these guys. Later, I was planning on taking them to Marquise xenogeneics.” Wang Yuhang smiled.

“Don’t kill them. They need to reach the spring. Otherwise, we cannot explain the reasons why they all died. But yes, before they go, we can use them to kill a horde of xenogeneics for us.” Han Sen smiled.

“By getting them to kill the xenogeneics, aren’t they the ones benefitting?” Wang Yuhang asked.

“Of course not. This is Planet Eclipse, and this is all ours. They can kill the xenogeneics, but the materials left behind are all ours for the taking. It’s free labor, man. We should take advantage of it,” Han Sen said.

Wang Yuhang understood and said, “Okay, I’ll keep leading them as I have been.”

The people there were Viscounts, and there was just under a hundred of them. But there were three to four hundred xenogeneics, and one of them was an Earl. It was difficult to determine who would be victorious.

“Crap! These guys are so strong. They trapped the Earl xenogeneic,” Wang Yuhang said, with much shock.

“The people here are the best-of-the-best from Narrow Moon. They are very strong, but the red mist spring has yet to erupt. It would be best if you lead them elsewhere for a bit, and perhaps nab a few more Earls.” Han Sen smiled.

“No problem. I have a handle on things.” Wang Yuhang puffed up and patted his chest.

“Wear this, too.” Han Sen gave the Marquise armor to Wang Yuhang. After Han Sen brought up his Dongxuan Sutra to Viscount, he didn’t really need the armor anymore. He only needed his rabbit shoes.

Wang Yuhang put on the armor immediately.

The Viscounts were fighting hard, and it took them half an hour to slay only half of the crowd. Many of them then turned to focus on killing the Earl.

The Earl was very strong, but it could only use physical methods to fight, and it wasn’t very smart. It was surrounded by elite Viscounts. It was powerful, but it was killed before long.

The Viscounts all sustained their own injuries, too, but none of them were killed. No one was hurt too grievously, either.

“Han Sen, you are here! I thought you were going to disobey the orders of the elders.” A few of the Viscounts, seeing Han Sen there, walked over to him. The Tego Viscount laughed coldly.

“I am a Rebate, too; I wouldn’t disobey orders,” Han Sen said impassively.

“Good, then take us there,” the Tego Viscount said. Other Viscounts then echoed him.

“Of course. I will take you there immediately, but before that, I hope you give us back what we own.” Han Sen smiled.

“What are you talking about? Since when have we given you what we’ve earned?” The Viscounts sounded angry.

“This is Planet Eclipse. I own all the resources harvested here. You killed my poor xenogeneics. I’m not asking for money, and there you are, going to steal my xenogeneic materials?” Han Sen calmly said.

“Han Sen, you must be dreaming. We killed the xenogeneics. If you want xenogeneic materials, you should go and hunt the creatures yourself!” one of them growled at Han Sen.

“Well, if you don’t give me back these xenogeneic genes, I can’t take you to the red mist spring,” Han Sen said.

“This is an order from the elders and the Kings. Do you dare disobey it?!” the Tego Viscount shouted.

Han Sen looked at him expressionlessly and said, “Planet Eclipse is mine. That is also a decree issued by the elders and Kings. You can disobey these laws, but I cannot? I am sure the Kings and the Queen will support me on this matter.”

The Viscounts looked pensive. Han Sen’s reasoning was solid. And if they failed to take the spring, how would they explain that to their elders upon returning home?

“The red mist spring is going to erupt any second now. If you’d rather waste time here instead of going there right now, that’s your decision,” Han Sen said.

You b*stard.M One Viscount threw the xenogeneic materials he had gathered upon the ground.

The Viscounts weren't willing to lose the red mist spring, so they had to swallow their displeasure and drop the xenogeneic materials. The Viscount that took the Earl class xenogeneic materials hesitated a great deal, but still ultimately had to discard the items.

"Can we go now?" Sword Know stared icily at Han Sen.

"Yes. Brother Qing, send a few people over to collect the materials." Han Sen smiled.

Chapter 1915 - Entering Red Mist Valley Again

Chapter 1915 Entering Red Mist Valley Again

Sword Know and the other Viscounts were angry. They followed Han Sen and Wang Yuhang for half the day, and wherever they went, they encountered a great many xenogeneics. And after every fight, the Viscounts were a little more injured. While many xenogeneics were slain, there was no sign of the red mist spring anywhere.

In addition, Han Sen took all the materials from the xenogeneics they slew. It upset them quite a bit.

When they were almost ready to unleash their rage, they saw something flashing red up ahead of them. It was obvious what that place was.

The Viscounts then ignored Han Sen and took off racing towards that place.

“Han Sen, are they going to be okay?” Wang Yuhang asked Han Sen.

“They’ll be fine. Go and fetch some more people to collect all these xenogeneic genes. When you’ve returned to base, stay there and do not come out,” Han Sen said.

Wang Yuhang and Xie Qing King went to fetch others to collect the xenogeneic materials and take them back to base. Then, Han Sen approached the Red Mist Valley.

When he drew close, he saw the Viscounts establishing camp just outside it. They hadn’t run into the mist yet. They knew they would not be able to see the spring before it erupted, so there was no point getting lost in the fog yet.

Seeing Han Sen draw near the valley, no one paid attention to him.

As this happened, a shadow appeared. It came through one of the magnetic storms and landed atop a mountain. It peered down at Red Mist Valley.

“Night River King, you are so early! Were you worried about your subordinates not being able to collect any of the spring?” Right after that, another shadow appeared. That was Black-Moon King.

Night River King looked at Black-Moon King and said, “You didn’t send anyone here, so why have you come?”

“Can’t I have the pleasure of watching?” Black-Moon King smiled.

“Hmph.” Night River King hummed and did not say anything.

From every direction across Planet Eclipse, many shadows descended. They were landing in various spots, but they all had their attention fixed on Red Mist Valley.

Planet Eclipse’s magnetic storms were strong, so it would be impossible to observe the valley from off-planet. So, the Kings had to come in person if they wanted to watch.

Most springs would release a dozen drops of spring water. Springs had been known to release over a hundred, but such an occurrence was very rare. They’d be quite lucky if the spring spawned a few dozen drops.

Han Sen was resting just outside Red Mist Valley, waiting for it to erupt. He felt the little Red Mist Minks moving around quite a bit in his pack. He took one out and put it in the palm of his hand.

Perhaps it was because Han Sen had been carrying them for a while, but they seemed to have realized that Han Sen was not planning on eating them. The mink did not look afraid. It used its claws to point into the Red Mist Valley.

“You want to go in there?” Han Sen asked the mink with surprise.

The little mink nodded. It sat down like a squirrel, continuing to point into the valley with a look of gleeful energy.

Then, Han Sen looked at the mink and asked, “Why do you want to go in? Do you know where the spring is?”

The little mink looked at Han Sen with confusion, unsure of what he was asking.

“It’s quite smart, but it has just been born. It doesn’t understand what I’m saying.” Han Sen frowned.

The little mink, seeing Han Sen not move into the valley, continued pointing into the mist with its claws. It was trying to hurry Han Sen into going in there. Han Sen brought out the other six little minks. They were all behaving the same way, and they really wanted to go in.

Han Sen put them inside his pocket and did as he was instructed. He walked into the valley.

The Viscounts were watching Han Sen as he went.

“Sword Know, Han Sen went into the valley. Do you think we should follow him?” One of the Viscounts informed Sword Know, bowing gracefully.

After Sword Know arrived on Planet Eclipse, he used the spirit orb to make himself an Earl. He hadn’t broken the law, though. He was a Viscount when he arrived on the planet, so he was merely being tricky.

Sword Know laughed darkly and said, “No. The red mist is still here, so the spring won’t yet erupt. It is pointless for him to go inside. There are many xenogeneics around, too. I think he is going inside for something else.”

In another tent, Du Lishe said, “Sister, Han Sen went into the valley. Do you think we should follow him?”

“The red mist is still there, so there’s no point. Keep waiting.” Rebecca saw the xenogeneics approach Han Sen, and continued by saying, “He is just a Baron. Even with Ghost Teeth Knife, it’ll be difficult for him.”

The other people felt like this, too. They were all in their tents, and no one was willing to stop Han Sen or follow him.

Night River King, however, frowned and thought to himself, “What is he doing?”

Han Sen’s performances had never failed to surprise him, and Night River King was no longer willing to take Han Sen’s behavior for granted.

The few Kings watching the valley had all seen Han Sen enter it, too. None of them had a clue what he might be hoping to accomplish. They thought the mist would disperse in about three hours, anyway. By going in now, you wouldn’t be able to see the spring.

Quickly, Han Sen approached the group of xenogeneics surrounding the mist. He moved his body swiftly and nimbly, needling his way past them all. He was too fast for the xenogeneics to respond properly.

Han Sen even stepped atop a xenogeneic. Within a few seconds, he was inside the valley. All before the xenogeneics could make a move.

“I forgot he had those shoes.” Rebecca frowned.

“What are those shoes, anyway? How can they give him such a grand speed boost? I worry that they might be Marquise class or something,” Du Lishe asked, with much shock.

It wasn’t just Du Lishe feeling this way, either. The Viscounts outside the valley were all mulling over the origin of those shoes.

But the Viscounts did not freak out just yet. They were still going to wait for the mist to disappear.

After Han Sen went into the valley, he pulled out one little mink. The little mink rapidly ran through the valley.

“No way this little guy knows where to find the spring,” Han Sen thought, as he followed the mink through the valley.

Because the red mist was strange, the Kings who were watching could only detect vague movement within the mist. They could not see what Han Sen was doing, though, and so they frowned.

Han Sen followed the mink deep into the valley. The deeper they went, the more excited the minks became. They went back to the cave where they were born.

“Is the spring inside this cave?” Han Sen was confused, as he didn’t think this was quite right. The place wasn’t as Yisha had described.

Chapter 1916 - Spring Eye Opened

Chapter 1916 Spring Eye Opened

Without the plants, the red mist had smothered the entire cave. Fortunately, Han Sen had his Dongxuan Aura to help him see things clearly.

After they entered the cave, the minks returned to where they were born. Then, they started digging with their little paws. They wanted to burrow through the stone. The little minks had just been born, however, and they were only Baron class. They were still very weak, so they could only leave small scratches across the rock.

Han Sen commanded them to fly back inside his pocket. Then, he pulled out his Ghost Teeth Knife and activated his Jadeskin light. Then, he got to digging the ground in their stead.

All seven of the minks popped their heads out of his pocket. Their fluffy heads all lined up to watch Han Sen dig through the stone.

Han Sen, after a little while of digging, had created a pit that was two meters deep. Suddenly, there was a dong noise. He wasn't sure what the knife had hit, but it sounded like it had struck metal. And furthermore, whatever it was did not sound broken.

Han Sen examined the bottom of the pit and saw something of a grey and white color. Han Sen dug up the stones around it, and he realized it was a bone. Only one inch of the bone was showing, but it was obviously much larger than that. What the bone might have belonged to, he wasn't sure.

So, Han Sen swung his Ghost Teeth Knife and resumed digging. When he unearthed not one but multiple bones, he was given a shock.

It appeared to be a complete skeleton that was more than four meters long. It was that of a creature with four legs. It looked like the skeleton of a Red Mist Mink.

It was dead, of course. And there it was, with only the bones remaining. The Ghost Teeth Knife was incapable of breaking the bones, and only faint marks were left on them. You could tell that its level must have been quite high before its passing.

Han Sen examined the bones for quite a long, but he found no source of xenogeneic genes. This was surprising.

“Weird. Did someone kill this xenogeneic and take its xenogeneic materials?” Han Sen thought that was incorrect, though. If it had been killed, why would the bones show zero signs of damage?

Han Sen did not know what to do, so he allowed the seven little minks to hop out of his pocket. Han Sen thought their purpose here was to check out these bones, but when they entered the pit Han Sen had dug, they went into a specific corner and kept on digging.

Han Sen was not a patient fellow, and he had no interest in waiting for them to complete the task of digging. So, with Ghost Teeth Knife, he took over the spot they were digging. He dug out two feet of stone before he came across something else.

A red mist started to ascend from it.

Before Han Sen could see what it was, the seven little minks jumped inside. They all ran into the red mist and disappeared.

Han Sen looked closer, and there, he noticed an orb that was around the size of a grapefruit. It looked very clear, as if it had been made of crystal.

But the red mist there made Han Sen believe it wasn't real. And now the minks had vanished.

Han Sen dug out the orb and took a look. He was given another shock.

Inside the orb, amidst the mist, there was a red palace. It looked like a suitable habitation for a god.

For some reason, the seven minks had gone inside the crystal orb. They appeared before the red palace, and then resumed trying to scratch their way in. They were trying to dig into the palace. There were no gaps in the walls, though. They were too weak, and they could not push open the doors to the place.

Han Sen looked at the nameplate of the palace. There were three words on it, but Han Sen could not read them. They weren't of a language belonging to the humans or the crystallizers, and neither were they from a language that existed in the geno universe.

"How did they get inside there?" Han Sen was playing with the crystal orb, trying to activate it. Nothing he did seemed to work.

If this was a treasure of some kind, it might require a very special element to activate it.

"If those seven little minks could enter the orb, that must mean that their power is the same as the orb's power. I can cast powers with my Dongxuan Aura. Perhaps I can simulate the lifeforce of the little mink and get it to work," Han Sen thought.

Han Sen was wondering how to get the seven minks out first, though. It was then that he realized the mist inside the cave was starting to fade. The spring was on the precipice of erupting.

Han Sen quit his stalling, put the crystal orb in his pocket, and ran out of the cave.

The valley's mist was starting to fade. Something was sucking it all away.

Han Sen followed the subsiding flow of the red mist until he reached a place where the red mist was going into the ground. There was a big hole there now, and the red mist was drifting down into it.

The mist around him was getting thinner and thinner, and it was then that Han Sen heard the sound of fighting. It must have been the Viscounts, rushing into the valley.

Nothing was coming out of the spring, though, so Han Sen stood there as if he was guarding it. He waited for a flow to begin.

Not long after, Sword Know made it deep into the valley. The red mist in the valley was almost all gone, and that was when he saw Han Sen. He coldly laughed, “Han Sen, it is useless, even if you did come early. You still have to wait for the spring!”

Many Viscounts were approaching behind Sword Know. Many xenogeneics were on their way, as well. They were all fighting hard.

Han Sen couldn't be bothered to talk to him, so he just sat down to wait.

Sword Know was next to the eye of the spring. He found a decent spot, and he got to killing the xenogeneics around him. Whenever the xenogeneics came within ten meters, he'd kill them quick.

“Earl!” Han Sen frowned. Sword Know had not used spirit power, but his swordlight power was better than that of a Viscount.

Han Sen reviewed the documents and read that only Viscounts could come.

“Why are you here if you are an Earl!” Han Sen shouted over to Sword Know.

Sword Know hummed and said, “I was a Viscount when I came. Am I not allowed to level up?”

After that, Sword Know looked at the other Viscounts sent by the other Kings. Then, he coldly laughed. “I'm not the only one who became an Earl here.”

Han Sen looked around. He saw a few Viscounts that were stronger than what Viscounts should have been capable of. He also saw Moon Wheel King's daughter Rebecca.

“You guys have really worked hard for this,” Han Sen coldly said.

“Stay away from me, in case I hurt you by mistake. You know I have only just leveled up to Earl, so I can’t really control my newfound powers all that well,” Sword Know said threateningly.

Chapter 1917 - Stealing Spring Water

Chapter 1917 Stealing Spring Water

Han Sen quietly drew out his Ghost Teeth Knife. He stood near the spring and waited for it to erupt. Sword Know frowned, but he didn't attack Han Sen. He knew the Kings were watching him. If they fought Han Sen now, Yisha wouldn't be very forgiving.

"Don't think Knife Queen's protection grants you the ability to do anything you want. When the spring erupts, you better not stop me. I will fight you for it," Sword Know said grimly.

Han Sen continued to ignore him, and he just focused his attention on the spring's eye.

Sword Know, seeing Han Sen being so arrogant, was enraged. He was an Earl, and Han Sen was just a Baron. That made him very upset. He wished to say something, but someone came closer to the spring's eye. It was Moon Wheel King's eldest daughter, Rebecca.

The person directly behind Rebecca was the Viscount of the Tego. He had also become an Earl now. The change happened after he fought the xenogeneics.

Not long after, seven or eight Earls arrived. They had all just become Earls, as well. They didn't make it obvious like Sword Know had by making themselves Earls as soon as they arrived.

But they knew what they were each trying to do, and so no one raised a fuss to blame one another.

The people that the Kings had sent were the Earls that needed to take the spring water. The Viscounts did not come. They took a path through the mountains, to prohibit the xenogeneics from coming in. They were killing all that dared to try.

Suddenly, near the spring's eye, the red mist vanished, revealing a black tunnel. It was only around the size of a man's fist, and it was difficult to determine how deep it went.

After the mist faded, a red light shot out of the cave. It fired straight up into the sky like a red beam. The beam was around an arm's thickness. It rose into the sky, but it did not spread out. It looked rather weird.

The Viscounts and the Earls knew the red mist spring was now erupting. The Earls quickly positioned themselves so they could steal the water.

"Get away!" The Tego Earl came at Han Sen, holding a big knife.

The spring eye was too small, and the surrounding area was fairly limited. Seven to eight people were already there. Han Sen had taken the best spot, and the Tego wanted to push him away.

Han Sen stared at the man, because he was not going to budge for anyone.

The Tego Earl's eyes looked cold. He swung his Ghost Head Knife at Han Sen. The black knife looked like the gaping maw of a tiger, ready to swallow him up.

Rebecca and the others were shocked. They weren't expecting Tego to go all in. He really wanted to kill Han Sen.

Genuine fights often made the avoidance of death a difficulty, but Han Sen was Knife Queen's student. Even if Rebecca was the one who wanted to kill him, she'd have to think twice about doing such a thing. It was rare for the Tego to do something like this so recklessly.

But the Tego Earl had been sent here by Shadow King. The others now thought that this might have made sense.

Shadow King was a very cruel individual. He controlled the Rebate's Dark Moon Hall, and often committed to acts that destroyed families. He wasn't like any of the other Kings. His men were fearless, unlike ordinary Nobles.

Han Sen merely moved his legs and evaded the Tego Earl's attack. He quickly leaped above the Tego's head.

"Good." The Tego had expected Han Sen to move away with that speed. His left hand punched upwards, though, with a lion's roar to accelerate it. It was something that was even scarier than the blade he wielded.

Now everyone realized his proficiency actually lay in fist skills and not knives. The attack was just to trick Han Sen.

"Scary guy. He must be a part of Dark Moon Hall," Rebecca thought to herself.

"Han Sen is either going to die or be heavily injured," Sword Know and the others guessed. Han Sen was fast, but the Tego Earl could anticipate and match his speed. They were so close to each other, and the latter was a far stronger fighter. If he wasn't going to be merciful, Han Sen was a dead man.

Seeing the Tego's facial expression, though, it seemed unlikely that he'd be handing out mercy.

As the fist-like tiger come up to Han Sen, Han Sen accelerated. In the air, he flew around like a hawk and avoided the Tego Earl's fist attack. Then, he used his Ghost Teeth Knife to slash the felon's neck.

The Tego Earl's neck had a small slice. It wasn't a deep cut, but it was bleeding. And what's more, it emitted a purple mist.

"What are those shoes Han Sen has? They're so fast! That speed is equal to the best even a Marquise can achieve." Rebecca and the other Earls were all in shock. They looked at Han Sen's rabbit shoes with ravenous greed.

The Tego Earl had been struck with Teeth power. The wound was small, though, and he was an Earl, so the power spread slowly. It'd be a little while before much damage was inflicted.

The Tego Earl roared with anger, and he wished to strike Han Sen again. But then, the spring eye flashed red. A red ball shot into the sky. It was so fast, not even Han Sen could react to it in time.

But as it went higher, it slowed down. When it reached a hundred meters in the sky, the red ball exploded. It was like a firework, and the spring water came out with it. There was a scatter of seven to eight drops.

The Tego Earl did not have time to fight Han Sen. Rebecca and the others were rushing up into the sky to collect the red waterdrops. But after rising a mere dozen meters, something suddenly flashed and sent them back down. They couldn't even eat dust.

Rebecca and the others were shocked. Han Sen was far too fast, and he was going to take two to four drops of the spring water.

They had clearly underestimated Han Sen's speed. Han Sen was flying like a phoenix, with the speed of shooting shadow. He managed to take every single waterdrop, and not leave a single one for the others.

Everyone was so mad, they wished to fight Han Sen. But then, another orb came shooting into the sky. Everyone was shocked, and they all tried to get the spring water that would be inside this second ball.

Chapter 1918 - Drinking Spring Water

Chapter 1918 Drinking Spring Water

Before they could do anything, Han Sen had already flown over towards the ball of light and grabbed it before it could explode. The red thing looked like a glob of jelly in Han Sen's hand. Without a single mote of hesitation, Han Sen shoved it into his mouth and swallowed it.

Rebecca and the other Earls were infuriated, but another red orb was coming.

“That is the third drop of springwater, so there must be much to earn here!” Rebecca and the other Earls wished to grab the coming ball.

But the same thing happened again, with Han Sen moving too quickly. Before the ball of light could even explode, Han Sen had grabbed it and gobbled it down.

The red, jelly-like liquid surged with power inside Han Sen's belly, and such overbearing strength felt as if it could tear Han Sen apart. So, Han Sen quickly used his Yin Yang Change. He turned that power into energy he could use, and then he let The Story of Genes absorb it.

Transforming that energy was difficult. The springwater's incredible power was swelling inside his veins, and it coursed throughout his entire body with a ceaseless cycle. Every time it did, a certain amount of it would be converted into energy that was suitable for Han Sen.

As this occurred, Han Sen's blood vessels endured stress that was akin to being repeatedly cut by knives. It was very painful.

Han Sen kept quiet as he suffered the pain of this exchange, though. He looked at the spring's eye, and he hoped to see more springwater coming out.

The springwater had been surprisingly quick in the beginning, and it was now coming at the speed of light. No one could react when the water first appeared. But whenever the

waterdrops finally began to slow down, Han Sen was still the first to react. Han Sen was far faster than the Earls, and they had no hope of competing against him.

Pang!

Another red flash came out of the spring's eye. Another red orb of springwater shot skyward out.

Rebecca shouted, "You guys go and stop Han Sen! I will take the springwater, and then split it up. Otherwise, with Han Sen's speed, he'll keep us from getting anything!"

Those that had been chosen to come to the spring were not stupid. The other elites were Earls, and it was why they had been selected by the Kings. After hearing Rebecca, the Earls immediately moved to prevent Han Sen from obtaining any more of the water.

Suddenly, a great deal of scary power turned to target Han Sen. The Earls summoned their strength, and although they did not expect to kill Han Sen outright, they at least thought they could stall him for a time.

In the meantime, Rebecca sprinted after the red ball. If another Earl had volunteered to go after the red ball, the others might not be so trusting, but Rebecca was Moon Wheel King's eldest daughter. She wouldn't break her promise to share the springwater, as that would cost not only her own reputation but her father's as well.

Suddenly, dragons roared. Scary lights, smokes, and shadows were pursuing Han Sen.

Han Sen's movement changed again, as if he was dancing. His body accelerated and flickered right past the attacks of the Earls. As he passed Rebecca, he snagged the drop of springwater that had almost been within Rebecca's grasp.

"His speed is like that of a Duke!" Rebecca and the other Earls were flabbergasted, in addition to being furious.

He was just a Baron, and even so, he had those scary shoes that granted him such unbelievable speed. Against it, the Earls did not stand a chance. It made them incredibly angry.

It was worse to know that as soon as Han Sen grabbed a droplet of water, he would swallow it whole without leaving behind even a single scrap.

Even more confusing was the fact that when Han Sen swallowed the springwater, his body should have been impacted by the overwhelming power. It should have been ravaging his insides and making him feel like he was dying. Yet Han Sen had swallowed so many without showing any reaction. He wasn't exhibiting any emotion, so it was like he wasn't enduring any pain.

Ordinary people, after swallowing one droplet, could become Barons. A Baron that swallowed a dozen could become a Viscount.

Han Sen had swallowed four or five of the red orbs. Each of those contained seven or eight drops. He must have consumed at least thirty of the drops by now, and yet, nothing seemed to have changed.

They had no clue what was going on inside Han Sen's body, though. Secretly, it really did feel as if he was getting cut up. But Han Sen had endured a lot of pain over the years, and he could handle and hide it far better than most people could. That was how he could refine the springwater and still fight Rebecca.

Rebecca and the others could not detect this, but the Kings could.

"Knife Queen has a brilliant eye. He can endure so much pain, and yet he remains so calm. He hasn't made a single mistake. I don't think I could have performed so well when I was in my youth," Black-Moon King said in admiration.

Night River King, on the other hand, looked awful. He said, "So? There have been four or five of the red mist orbs. He must have claimed around thirty drops without leveling up. With that talent, do you honestly believe he can become a King?"

“Who knows? It is hard to tell.” Black-Moon King smiled.

Flower King and Moon Wheel King were watching the happenings of the valley, too. Flower King frowned. “This red mist spring offers a lot. It might even erupt a few more times! Han Sen’s shoes are too weird. They give him the speed of a Duke. Rebecca and the others aren’t able to collect any of the springwater.”

Moon Wheel King smiled and said, “Maybe not.”

Flower King looked at Moon Wheel King with shock. Moon Wheel King didn’t elaborate, but Flower King could guess what he was hinting at.

Pang!

Another red orb came out of the springwater. Han Sen fired his power to get over towards it. Seven or eight Earls roared together and unleashed their powers, but they still couldn’t match Han Sen’s speed. He moved directly in front of the orb.

Rebecca wore a complex expression. She was holding a spell card that was in the shape of a turtle. Light glowed from the symbols on the card. It looked as if she didn’t want to use it, but she gritted her teeth and threw it at Han Sen.

It traveled through the air and landed on Han Sen. Han Sen couldn’t dodge, and the spell card attached itself to his body.

When the turtle spell card landed on Han Sen, he felt his body become heavy. He began to slow down, and gravity dragged so heavily on his body that he almost fell from the sky.

Han Sen’s blood was boiling. So, he reached out a hand and grabbed the red mist glob before he fell.

Chapter 1919 - Red Mist Mink Beast

Chapter 1919 Red Mist Mink Beast

“The Jade Turtle Spell? You already had a plan for slowing Han Sen down?” Flower King asked, looking at the spell that had been cast on Han Sen.

Moon Wheel King said coldly, “The speed of those shoes may not mean much to us, and they wouldn’t work if there were Dukes on the field. Against lower level opponents, however, they make the boy undefeatable. So, I had a plan to mitigate that.”

Flower King was shocked, and he said, “The Jade Turtle Spell comes from the remains of a deified turtle. There are only 1365 of them in existence. They can only be used once to suppress creatures and slow them down. Not even Kings can withstand them. After all these years, very few remain. It is a waste to use one on a Baron.”

Moon Wheel King looked tired, and he said, “That is why Rebecca did not use it at first. She did not expect this spring could provide so much. But since the spring was so abundant, and the shoes were proving too much of a challenge, she had no choice but to use the spell.”

“She made a good decision. From how the spring has performed thus far, I’m guessing that it will erupt another three or four times. It was worth using it. If we failed to bring back a single droplet, I doubt our wives would soon forgive us.” Flower King and Moon Wheel King both looked at each other.

Han Sen’s body was near the spring’s eye now. His legs felt as if they were made of lead. He used all the power he could to fuel his rabbit shoes, but he was still as slow as he would have been if he wasn’t wearing the shoes at all.

Han Sen wished to detach the spell card, but it stuck to him tightly. It was like it was magnetized to him and he couldn’t remove it. In addition to his decreased speed, his

jumping and flying abilities were restricted. But those aside, Han Sen could still use his power.

Seeing Han Sen get hit by the turtle spell and fall next to the spring eye, Sword Know and the others were delighted. The Tego Earl ran forward with his tiger fist to strike Han Sen.

When Han Sen had been able to use his rabbit shoes to full-effect, he had not been afraid of the attack. But now that he was so slow, he could not dodge the fist and its hammering light.

Han Sen was next to the spring's eye, yes, but he was not worried. Han Sen summoned something from his Sea of Soul, a red mist suddenly wrapped up his right hand. It was like a glove made of silk.

This glove was obtained from the Red Mist Mink that Han Sen had killed before. It was a glove beast soul that increased the speed and power of Han Sen's hand.

Perhaps it was because he had yet to match the Earl class of the item itself, but it only wrapped up one hand.

But to Han Sen, that would be enough. The Nobles he contended with were Earls at best, and what's more, they had only just become Earls. They'd only be slightly stronger than the glove at best, and it was likely they were weaker.

Han Sen donned the glove and clutched his Ghost Teeth Knife. Seeing the incoming strike headed for him, he did not try to evade it. Instead, he threw his own attack directly towards it.

Because Spell was not a Viscount yet, Han Sen could not use Jadeskin, Mutant Blood, nor the Dongxuan Sutra. He could only use The Story of Genes to fight the Tego Earl.

Everyone there, seeing Han Sen fighting the Tego Earl, frowned. There was no way a Baron could hope to defeat the Tego Earl. Han Sen was not wearing his Marquise armor, either. He could be killed with a single punch.

The Tego Earl saw Han Sen slashing towards his fist, and he looked cold. He increased his speed, hoping to finish Han Sen for good.

A black tiger punch of light came roaring towards Han Sen. It was probably going to turn him into dust.

Ghost Teeth Knife's blade was purple-black. Without any god light or godly presence, the attack that came forward to meet with the fist looked ordinary.

Katcha!

That scary attack looked incredible, in the eyes of others. But it was cut open by the Ghost Teeth Knife. From top to bottom, it was sliced in two.

Ghost Teeth Knife and the Tego's fist came against each other, and a dong noise sounded. Han Sen stood where he was, unmoving. The Tego, on the other hand, went stumbling back four steps.

The fist had an obvious knife mark, and blood leaked between the Earl's fingers.

"Impossible!" The Tego Earl was shocked. The other Earls were stunned, too.

"That glove! There is something amiss with his glove! It is a powerful treasure that increases his strength and speed!" Rebecca was the heir of a half-deity. She knew far more than an ordinary Earl, and she could immediately identify the problem.

Pang!

Before anyone's daze had been broken, the spring's eye unleashed another red light. More springwater was up for grabs.

"His movement speed is being suppressed by the Jade Turtle Spell. He cannot steal any more from us, so ignore him!" an Earl shouted.

But Rebecca and the other Earls had already realized this. Silently, they rushed after the springwater.

Rebecca and the others could tell that Han Sen's hand's speed and power had increased, but he was still slow to move. He could not fly or pose a significant threat in battle for them. But this belief made the Earl that made the call too comfortable; it's what prompted his shout. The others were moving already.

A red light shot out of the spring's eye, as quick as lightning.

Rebecca and the others were prepared to steal the water this time, but just as the light came firing out, a hand snatched it a mere two meters above the ground. Then, many more red balls came out from the red mist spring's red beam.

Everyone was shocked as they stared at Han Sen's hand. He was standing near the spring's eye, and they stared at him in a daze.

The springwater was random. When a droplet rose from the spring, it was initially moving at the speed of light. Not even a Marquise could capture one of those droplets at the moment it spawned. But Han Sen had managed to grab it with his bare hands. That was shocking.

"Coincidence?" Rebecca wondered, not able to believe what she was seeing.

"It's not a coincidence," Night River King said, as his eyes froze on Han Sen.

Moon Wheel King and the others had realized this, too. It wasn't by chance, and it shocked them all.

"We cannot let him stay near the red mist spring!" Sword Know was furious now. He slashed towards Han Sen. The Tego came at Han Sen from the other side.

Chapter 1920 - Empty Mouth, White Teeth Super Gene

Chapter 1920 Empty Mouth, White Teeth Super Gene

Sword Know's swordlight became a star in the sky. It descended like a meteor shower, drenching Han Sen's entire body in the starry swordlight. From the other side, the Tego Earl was like a tiger. His punch leaped forward like a beast, with Han Sen as its prey.

Han Sen was under fire from both sides. He couldn't speed up, and neither could he hope to evade. He didn't want to leave the spring's eye, either. With his immobility, he had to stop the spring water the moment it appeared. If the droplets made it past him, he wouldn't stand any chance of retrieving them.

But there was a chance that the red beam was harmful, so he couldn't stand directly over the spout. Even if he could, he knew Sword Know and the others wouldn't let him stay there.

Rebecca and the other Earls did not fight alongside Sword Know and Tego Earl. They believed Han Sen's power might have been the equivalent of an Earl, but his skill most certainly wasn't. Furthermore, his movement had been restricted until he was slower than a Baron. He'd be lucky not to get killed by those two Earls.

Han Sen wasn't disheartened by those odds, though. He put the springwater into his mouth, while his other hand wielded Ghost Teeth Knife. He spun it in a circle.

Sword Know's starry swordlight impacted the twirling knife and vanished into the blurring circle.

On the other side, the Tego Earl's fist was falling towards Han Sen. Han Sen moved his hand and pulled the knife circle closer. The starry swordlight emerged from the knife circle, prepped to strike the fist.

Boom!

The swordlight and the fistlight shattered, creating a large shockwave. Sword Know and the Tego stumbled back. Han Sen, on the other hand, was unharmed. He remained standing exactly where he had been.

Everyone was frozen. No one had expected this result.

“Empty Mouth, White Teeth! That is the hardest technique of Teeth Knife. It can exchange black and white, yin and yang. Even the few Dukes that have practiced Teeth Knife would not dare risk using this. No one dares to use it because success is not guaranteed. Han Sen has just used it, though, and he did succeed!” Rebecca stared at the scene in disbelief.

Rebecca wasn't the only one thinking this way, either. Flower King and Moon Wheel King were in just as much shock.

Empty Mouth, White Teeth was not difficult to practice, but it was extremely difficult to use in combat. The user had to have true understanding of their own power and their enemy's power as well. They had to know a lot, too. If they didn't, they'd only end up bringing harm upon themselves.

Out of all the Rebate, the only one who could use this ability in combat was Knife Queen.

A few of the Dukes that had practiced Teeth Knife had given it a try in the past, but they all failed. And since a miss in combat could result in death, few others were keen on trying it.

Amidst everyone's shock, the spring's eye gleamed with another red light. Another orb of spring water was shooting out.

Han Sen reached out his hand and grabbed the droplet. It was really pleasing to see him do this, like watching someone catch a fly with chopsticks.

“I have to get him away from the spring’s eye!” Rebecca turned into a light, and she shot towards Han Sen.

Sword Know and the Tego Earl were running towards Han Sen, too. They wanted to get him away from the spring; they’d kill him if they had to.

Du Lishe and the other Viscounts were still dealing with the xenogeneics. Du Lishe was still a little weak, though, and Moon Wheel King had not permitted her to become an Earl there. So, she did not go to the red mist spring’s eye. Still, she was able to keep an eye on the situation unfolding there.

Han Sen had taken all the spring water alone, and he had managed to do it while beating back the Tego Earl and Sword Know. Needless to say, she was surprised. But when Rebecca decided to join the two attacking Han Sen, what happened next made Du Lishe believe she was dreaming.

The purple-black Ghost Teeth Knife moved in the same way Han Sen did. It was difficult to predict. He was fighting back the Earls, and despite Rebecca joining in to help, they could still not remove him from the spring’s eye.

The scariest thing about all this was that when Han Sen and Rebecca were fighting, Han Sen wasn’t looking at the spring’s eye. But when a red orb flew out, Han Sen would lean in and grab it really quick. He was faster than lightning, and in a flash, he’d have put it in his mouth.

Not only Du Lishe was shocked by this. Rebecca, the other Earls, and all the Kings that were observing the events were in shock.

Han Sen’s Teeth Knife was like a raging beast. His skills were very serious, and he looked like a champion. The Teeth Knife skill was helping Han Sen a lot right now. He was

surrounded, but even so, he never slipped up once. He wasn't even rushed or panicked, and his performance was flawless.

Despite the difficulty of performing Empty Mouth, White Teeth in combat, Han Sen used it twenty times without fail. Now they knew that Han Sen was really like Knife Queen. He could use the ability in combat, to a degree that exceeded the chance of being a lucky fluke.

Boom!

As the observers watched the fight, Han Sen and his knife seemed to merge. Han Sen was Han Sen, and Ghost Teeth Knife was Ghost Teeth Knife, but now they were combined. They were one, like an evil-looking beast with a grin. It gave people the willies.

"Teeth Knife knifemind!" Suddenly, Night River King let out a scream.

Yes, it was a Teeth Knife knifemind: the purest example of one, actually. And it was coming from a Baron.

Moon Wheel King and the others were speechless. Even with their years of experience, they had no idea how Han Sen could practice Teeth Knife knifemind in such a small amount of time.

But this was the Rebate's Teeth Knife. It was something most Rebate could not practice. Han Sen was just an outsider, and he had learned it all within a month. Moon Wheel King and the rest wouldn't have believed it if they weren't there to see it themselves.

"Is he a knife skill genius?" The Kings looked at him with complicated expressions.

Rebecca was shocked, too. The scariest thing was that Han Sen's knifemind was gradually increasing.

Chapter 1921 - Knifemind Shocking the Sky

Chapter 1921 Knifemind Shocking the Sky

Han Sen lifted his knife. There was no shiny knifelight, no spiritual glow, but the knifemind was so scary. It felt like a beast that had come to swallow the sky. It could not be avoided, and even space above would find itself fractured.

Although it was a wrong feeling, it shocked everyone with awe. It was a feeling they couldn't escape.

Katcha!

Han Sen slashed towards the Tego Earl. He cut through his foe's armor and drew a deep cut across his chest. His Teeth power was buffed by his knifemind, and a purple mist began to envelop the wound, tearing it wider.

Sword Know's meteor-like swordlight and another Earl's spear came striking at the same time. Han Sen did not move, though. His Ghost Teeth Knife began whirling up another spiral. He caught the swordlight inside the circle, and then he threw it towards Rebecca to slow her down.

At the same time, Han Sen's left hand grabbed the red mist spring water. He put it in his mouth and swallowed it.

All these actions were performed in one uninterrupted sequence. It looked simple and smooth. So many Earls were attacking Han Sen, but he made it look like he was shooing off a bunch of kids.

"What the hell?" Flower King's eyes were open wide as he stared at Han Sen.

Han Sen didn't just generate a normal Teeth Knife knifemind. His knifemind was growing quickly, becoming something greater than usual. Even Flower King, who had lived for a thousand years, had not seen anything like this before.

Moon Wheel King and Night River King looked at Han Sen, but remained speechless.

Three months of a major gambit had been reduced to a joke. Han Sen had only taken one and a half months to develop a terrifying knifemind. The most talented Dukes had taken several years to make a remotely similar amount of progress.

Yisha's eyes looked bright as she watched. What she was thinking, though, you could not tell.

Katcha!

Han Sen cut Sword Know's arm off as he grabbed another glob of spring water and shoved it into his mouth.

Everything was so seamless. If Sword Know and the others weren't the ones being subjected to this treatment, they'd undoubtedly have praised the marvelous performance. All they could feel now, though, was shock.

It was unbelievable for a Baron to use sword skills like that, even if he was being slightly buffed by the treasures he used.

Han Sen kept on fighting, swallowing the orbs of spring water as he went. He had consumed at least ten of them, and he used Yin Yang Change to convert them into power. His energy and Spell armor began to turn red and give off a strange mist. He looked so very weird.

Rebecca and the others did not want to retreat in such a state. They used all the power they could muster to fight Han Sen, but it meant naught. They still couldn't keep up, and they hadn't been able to claim a single drop of water for themselves. Han Sen had taken them all.

The storage capacity of that particular red mist spring was beyond anyone's wildest expectations. It was still releasing spring water.

"Huh, so what? Even if he does have tremendous skill, he has swallowed at least one hundred red mist spring water drops. Even if he was a bug, he should have been able to become a Viscount a few times over by now, but he hasn't yet leveled up. How does he expect to level up? I don't even think this guy will even be able to become a Duke," Night River King said, as he coldly looked upon Han Sen.

Black-Moon King sighed. He greatly favored Han Sen, but what Night River King said was true. Even a minuscule insect should have become a Viscount by now, but Han Sen had not. His ascendance required far too many resources.

If it was that difficult for him to become a Viscount, it would be even harder for him to level up and hit loftier tiers. Even if Yisha was willing to keep growing him, the chances of Han Sen ever becoming a King were super low.

"It is a shame. To have such talent and yet be shackled with a geno art and body such as that." Moon Wheel King sighed. He felt very sorry for the lad.

Flower King looked at Han Sen with admiration. He sighed and said, "It does not matter how good his skills are; if he cannot attain a higher level, it is all for naught. Thirteen spring water drops could create ten Viscounts. And yet, he has not leveled up. I don't think he will ever be a King."

The red mist inside Han Sen's body was getting thicker and thicker, and it was as if it was getting hacked at by blades. But his Spell armor remained quiet, and it wasn't releasing any energy at all.

Han Sen kept fighting and drinking all the water he could grab. The spring continued to erupt and supply him with drops. Everyone thought each glob of water would be the last, but their expectations were shattered by the emergence of another—each and every time.

When Han Sen had swallowed seventeen or eighteen globs, the spring's eye began throwing out even more water.

“How many xenogeneics were killed here in ancient times to produce such a large quantity of water beneath the surface?” Black-Moon King said in wonder.

Night River King's eyebrows kept on twitching. Han Sen had swallowed so much spring water, and he found himself having difficulty holding back. He had thought the spring water would have emptied by now, so he had held himself back each time.

But every time he thought of that, more water came out. Right now, the twentieth glob of spring water was emerging.

Night River King was now full of regret. He regretted not making a move of his own any sooner. He could have grabbed at least ten water drops. Now, all of the spring water was inside Han Sen's belly, and he could not even produce a fart. It was a waste of a rare material.

When the spring erupted again, Night River King finally couldn't keep himself restrained. He did not care if there was any more spring water coming or not; he was going to make a move. If he didn't, he believed his heart would be buried by dust—and that would affect his training.

Moon Wheel King and the others were shocked. If a red mist spring produced one hundred water drops, it was considered very large. This spring had produced almost two hundred, and it was still going.

The scariest thing was that Han Sen had swallowed so much of that water, and yet he had not become a Viscount.

Sword Know's eyebrows jumped, as if he had just heard something. His face changed, but he decided to spit out some blood and jump towards Han Sen like a bloody arrow.

Han Sen slashed towards the blood arrow and cut it open. But inside the blood arrow was a red bug which continued flying towards Han Sen. It was so small and so fast that it hit Han Sen's forehead, even with his Spell helmet on.

As this occurred, the spring's eye was shining bright. A red light came out of the red spring, but this time, it was not water. It was a red soul.

“The red mist soul!” All the Kings screamed.

But before they could do anything, Han Sen grabbed the soul and swallowed it.

Chapter 1922 - Spell Evolution

Chapter 1922 Spell Evolution

Han Sen kept fighting and consuming the spring water he could get. His mind was thinking about the little bug on his forehead, so he wasn't paying attention to anything else.

Han Sen thought what he had taken was just a larger water drop. It sure tasted like ordinary spring water, but after swallowing it, he acknowledged that something might have been wrong. It was as if he swallowed a vat of lava, and his entire body flared up with pain. He was burning on the inside with a sensation that was worse than any cut.

But Han Sen kept on casting his Yin Yang Change, trying to convert the horrible substance. His other hand was reaching for his forehead, to try to remove the red bug.

The bug looked like blood. It was only the size of a needle head, and when it touched Han Sen's forehead, it tried to drill through the helmet. Quickly, a hole had been punctured through the Spell armor. The fiend was going to go right through.

Han Sen used his other hand to cover the hole, but the bug was already inside the armor. He couldn't get a hold of it.

Han Sen frowned. Before he could think about how to deal with the bug, Sword Know and the Tego Earl were coming for him once again.

They were just like Han Sen right now, in that they did not know about the red mist soul. They didn't know that after the red mist soul, there would not be any more spring water.

The red mist soul was extremely rare. It was an angry spirit that the spring itself had generated.

The red mist spring worked on Viscounts. It was not effective when you reached Earl, but the red mist soul was. It could trigger an evolution for an Earl. The chances weren't very high, but the mere prospect of it being a possibility was quite scary.

If normal Viscounts used a red mist soul, they could easily become an Earl. It was a guarantee.

The Kings watched Han Sen swallow the red mist soul, and they thought it to be an even grander waste. None felt this more than Night River King. He wished he had allowed Sword Know to use the Blood-Brain Bug sooner.

Blood-Brain Bugs were a harmful xenogeneic. As a parasite, they could latch themselves onto the brains of others. One of them would look like a normal bug, but when activated, it could ravage the brain of its victim. Its behavior could be controlled remotely, too.

Seeing the Blood-Brain Bug pierce the helmet, Han Sen's body shone. The Spell armor was glowing white.

The red mist soul in Han Sen's body, and the spring water, were converted into energy inside his armor. Spell's energy was finally released. It was going to reach Viscount class.

Katcha!

The Spell armor was bathed in light, and in its radiance, the Blood-Brain Bug melted. Nothing of it remained.

Han Sen's Ghost Teeth Knife glowed white as it was imbued with Spell's light. It was a knifelight.

Han Sen's knifemind was also increasing. It was scary before, but now it was becoming something even greater. It was way past the level of a Duke.

Boom!

The person and the knife combined into one. The knifelight was like the light of dawn. It banished the dark and signaled the coming of a new day. And now, it was going after the Tego Earl.

The Tego Earl was shocked. That knifelight was scarier than any monster. It took over his entire world. The Tego Earl swung his fist like a tiger, but he himself wished to retreat.

The knifelight acted as if it had a life of its own. It smashed into his back and sent fractures all the way through his chest. He started to bleed profusely.

When the blood spilled out, the purple mist began to spread across the wounds. The Tego Earl looked scared, and his wounds expanded quickly. His chest was torn wide open, and then, his organs fell out.

“Aargh!” The Tego Earl screamed. He had been ripped apart by the Teeth power.

Rebecca and the others stopped attacking. They looked at Han Sen, holding Ghost Teeth Knife like a demon.

He didn't look like he was going to stop. And he turned his murderous attention onto Sword Know.

In that fight, all that the other Earls had wanted was a bit of that spring water. It was only the Tego Earl and Sword Know that wanted to kill Han Sen. But he didn't look willing to stop.

The knife he wielded was like a demon striker. The knifelight was like a maw of toxic teeth, wanting to crush Sword Know.

Sword Know knew he was injured, and far worse than the Tego Earl had been just before Han Sen killed him. He couldn't take Han Sen's strike, and he looked so scared. He flailed his sword to spawn another meteoric slash that could hopefully break Han Sen's swordlight.

“Enough! The fight for the red mist spring has ended.” Night River King’s scary power and aura landed. It covered the entirety of the Red Mist Valley. He spoke in a cold voice.

Han Sen acted as if he had not heard him. He didn’t care about the King’s presence, and he still continued swinging his knife. The knifelight cut through from the top of Sword Know’s head, down through his body until he flopped in two.

Everyone was in shock. They never expected Han Sen could be so cruel. Even with Night River King there, he had mercilessly slain Sword Know.

Night River King was furious, and he said, “I told you to stop! And you are still killing?”

Night River King swung his palm, and his scary power came towards Han Sen to crush him. The mere presence that the hand possessed was terrifying. As rocks were broken, it felt like the end of the world.

Han Sen was holding his Ghost Teeth Knife. He stared at that hand that towered towards the sky like a mountain. He wasn’t scared, though.

His knifemind roared like a beast, but the King’s power did not relent.

Boom!

Before the hand could land, a purple gust of knife wind came from Planet Blade. It traveled through space like a beam that crossed the universe. It broke through Planet Eclipse’s atmosphere and cut through the hand.

“Aargh!” A scream sounded, and the big hand was sliced into dust by that fearsome knifelight. Night River King’s body disappeared, right from where he was on Planet Eclipse.

“Please don’t be mad, Knife. Night River King was just angry, and he did not mean to hurt Han Sen,” Moon Wheel King said, looking up towards Planet Blade.

“I will decide the fate of my student. Others should learn not to interfere.” Queen’s voice sounded empty, but it was all over Narrow Moon.

Moon Wheel King shook his head and then vanished from Planet Eclipse.

The other Kings left, too. There was no point in them staying any longer. If they tried anything, they'd be humiliated like Night River King had.

Now Han Sen had his Teeth Knife knifemind, Yisha could protect him properly. They weren't Moon Wheel King, and they were not deified. They wouldn't want to incite Yisha's fury.

Chapter 1923 - The Third Form

Chapter 1923 The Third Form

Han Sen was believed to have obtained his Teeth Knife knifemind in one and a half months. What's more, his knifemind was very close to the proficiency that only a King could demonstrate. It dazed the Narrow Moon elites into a state of disbelief.

They had seen this with their own eyes, though. And so they couldn't actually doubt it.

They couldn't claim that Han Sen was cheating, either. Yisha was the only other that could practice Teeth Knife in such a fashion. Even if Yisha was helping Han Sen cheat somehow, there was no way Han Sen should have been able to earn such a knifemind in such a short time.

People were worried, though. And no one could doubt Han Sen's talent.

Han Sen's performance with the red mist spring was shocking. Many members of Moon Garden, such as Rebecca and Du Lishe, now greatly feared Han Sen.

The day after the events of the red mist spring, Yisha gave Han Sen a call. She didn't say much, but she provided him with a geno art to practice with.

You performed well. This geno art is your reward. But you cannot be cocky about it. You need to remember that if you do not obtain deified status, it will be useless. Your strength won't matter."

She gave him some Viscount geno fluid, too, so he could practice.

Han Sen did not understand what Yisha meant by this. But he was relieved that Yisha had protected him, indicating that things were okay between them.

Not long after, Moon Garden invited Han Sen to become a member, but Yisha rejected it on his behalf. Yisha had wanted Han Sen to join Moon Garden to gain support from the tribe, but she changed her mind after all that had happened. She didn't want him joining them.

Because of this, the Kings at Narrow Moon held another meeting. They tried to convince Yisha to allow Han Sen to become a member of Moon Garden. Her response was cold. "My student is not any boy you can push around however you wish."

After that, she left. She didn't save face for Moon Wheel King, either.

Moon Wheel King and the others wanted Han Sen to join simply because Han Sen's talents were too shocking. His mind far exceeded the capabilities of others at the same level. If he could join Moon Garden and practice with the members there, the others should also benefit and become stronger.

Yisha was no longer interested in this arrangement, though. And it wasn't as if they could force Han Sen to take part in Moon Garden.

...

Han Sen was in his room, playing with the Jade Turtle Spell. Normally, it was a one-time use item. It wouldn't come off after being used. Instead, its power would be exhausted after a day and the entire thing would shatter.

When Han Sen returned to base, his body felt awful under the weight of the Jade Turtle Spell. He tried to pull it off, but alas, he was unable to. Since he couldn't use super king spirit mode, he ended up trying the Dongxuan Sutra. He spread its influence into the Jade Turtle Spell, then simulated its powers and removed it from himself.

The power of the Jade Turtle Spell was very deep. Han Sen only simulated a tiny part of it, but he was able to learn a lot. It also made him wonder where it had come from.

Due to the power being too deep and profound, Han Sen was unable to learn it all. So, he began fiddling with the thing using the Dongxuan Aura to slowly learn more about it.

The geno art Yisha had given Han Sen was a light-based art called Moon. As he practiced it, he found that it fit him quite well.

Moon was fairly amazing, as well. It could use the powers of light to generate a moon of his own. The power was something like the ability of an Earl to generate a spirit that wasn't actually a real spirit.

Han Sen was quite interested in this geno art. And since it was Yisha who had allowed him to practice it, he didn't dare be lazy with the gift. He practiced with it whenever he was able to.

The biggest reward he had received from the events at the red mist spring was his Spell evolving. Quite surprisingly, the Viscount class Spell was able to unleash light powers of its own. Furthermore, it possessed a third form.

Geno armaments had two forms, traditionally. One was the plain armorset form that was always there for him to equip.

The second form came from reaching the second stage of evolution. In Han Sen's case, it was a lady form; the gunner called Spell. Xie Qing King's book and Wang Yuhang's bike were the second forms, too.

Very few, if any, had heard of there being a third possible form. Han Sen knew very little about geno armaments, though, so he wasn't sure if it was how uncommon it truly was. Regardless, this was the first time he had seen or heard of such a thing.

Spell's third form was that of a sniper rifle. Han Sen tried out the rifle and found it surprisingly easy to get headshots from a distance of a hundred miles.

The biggest advantage of having a sniper rifle was that Han Sen's power was concentrated into bullets. Future engagements wouldn't be so costly, either, with the range of the weapon.

The normal power of a Viscount came from swordlights or knifelights. It was very lucky if you could cast such strikes over a distance of a few hundred meters.

But with that sniper rifle, Han Sen could guarantee headshots without his targets being aware of his presence. It was a perfect weapon for assassinations.

The only limitation was that the bullet velocity depended on Spell's power and Han Sen's own power. But that still meant that the stronger they grew, the stronger the bullets would become. He just couldn't use other sources of power to fuel it.

All in all, Han Sen loved it. He could level up quite easily with the rifle, and headshots would not be difficult to get.

Tzi! Tzi!

Han Sen was playing with the Jade Turtle Spell, and as he did, something moved in his pocket. It made a sound.

Han Sen opened his pocket and saw the red mist orb inside. The seven minks were reemerging from the orb.

When they saw Han Sen, they opened their eyes and began crooning at him.

"Are you guys hungry?" Han Sen thought he understood what they were implying.

The little minks in Han Sen's pocket nodded.

So, Han Sen fed them some xenogeneic meat. During the Red Mist Valley incident, the Viscounts had killed many creatures for him. He moved the flesh back to the base, and there was a lot. Because of this, he didn't mind feeding the little creatures.

The seven minks munched on the flesh, and while they were eating, Han Sen used his Dongxuan Aura to scan their bodies and observe their energy flow.

After watching them for a while, something gave him a shock. The minks really were just Baron class, but their energy flows were complex. They were unlike any other Baron he had seen before.

Chapter 1924 - Red Copper Palace Super Gene

Chapter 1924 Red Copper Palace Super Gene

Han Sen tried to simulate the energy flow of the little minks. He could do this by transforming the Dongxuan Sutra's power into the power the little minks possessed.

Han Sen didn't think it'd be difficult to do, as the little minks had only just been born. But it actually took Han Sen seven or eight days to simulate their energy.

Around this time, the little minks got hungry. They came out to eat again. After every meal, they returned to the red mist orb. They always tried to enter the red copper palace, but they failed each time.

Seeing the little minks going back into the red mist orb, Han Sen finally finished simulating their powers. He then tried to put the new energy into the red mist orb.

When the power hit the red mist orb, Han Sen felt the red mist orb respond, as if it had a weird power of its own. It sucked Han Sen right inside.

Dong!

The red mist orb fell on the floor, and Han Sen had entered it. He could see a lot of red mist, in addition to the big red copper palace.

Han Sen walked through the mist and headed straight for that elusive palace. The seven minks kept on looping around the palace, unable to find an access point that would grant them entry.

Seeing Han Sen, the seven little minks looked surprised. They surrounded Han Sen, jumping and screaming. They then ran for the main door.

They lined up. Some of them used their claws to push, some of them used their bellies to push, and some of them used their backs to push. They tried their hardest to push against the door, but it wouldn't budge.

Tzi! Tzi!

The little guys pushed so hard to no avail, then turned their attention to Han Sen to ask for his help.

Han Sen had seen things like this many times before. If the seven minks wanted to enter that place so badly, there must be something valuable inside.

He didn't hesitate. He placed his hand against the door and pushed with the minks, trying to force it open.

But the door was like stone. Han Sen tried his best to get it to move, but it wouldn't budge an inch.

Han Sen looked at the door and found no indication of a lock. He frowned.

"Tzi! Tzi! Tzi! Tzi!" The little minks kept pointing at something, trying to tell him something.

"What are you saying?" Han Sen looked at them, but he could not speak their language. He couldn't understand them.

Luckily, the Dongxuan Aura could allow him to read minds, at least a little. The minks kept on running and pointing, and eventually, he heard a sound. It was a simple sound, but Han Sen could guess what they meant.

Han Sen tried pushing the door again, but this time, he used the little minks' power to do so. He was simulating them, yes, but he could still use the energy flow far better than the minks themselves could. When he pushed, the red copper door slowly opened.

The little minks were delighted. They lined up and helped Han Sen push.

The door was opening slowly, and when the opening reached one foot wide, the seven minks could not wait any longer. They hurriedly shuffled themselves inside. Han Sen couldn't wait either, and so he squeezed in through the gap. And on the inside, the palace really shocked Han Sen.

Han Sen immediately noted how elegant the place had looked from the outside. It had led him to believe that it was some sort of ancient relic, but now that he was looking at the interior, the palace was shining with lights. It looked very scientific. It was different from what he was expecting.

The seven minks ran inside the palace as Han Sen followed. There were many strange tools and gizmos, and he felt as if he was entering the research quarters of some alien base.

Han Sen saw there was a large throne inside the palace, though. There was a ten-meter-tall machine sitting on it, curiously enough. It looked like an old model of Alliance warframe. It was so old that it looked like a medieval knight. It was clad in heavy armor and everything.

Upon further inspection, Han Sen realized that the knight did not have any electrical devices attached to it. It was built from what he assumed to be red copper. It sat on the throne, and it gave no indication of possessing a life force. Even so, it gave the threatening feeling that it could get up and fight whenever it wished to.

The seven little minks raced under its feet, then they climbed its copper body until they reached the heart. They pushed and squealed. What they were doing was anyone's guess.

Boom!

Amidst Han Sen's confusion and wonder, the knight did indeed stand up off the throne. It lurched to its feet with a jerking movement and shook the minks off of its body.

In the knight's empty eyes, a red light started to gleam. The light looked like some sort of warning beacon. Near the knight's heart, the red light grew stronger. It fired a red light towards the red minks, and all seven of them disappeared.

And then, Han Sen saw the knight start to move. It was approaching him quickly. Its red copper body gave off a sense of foreboding.

And shortly after, it was right next to Han Sen. It reached out its big hand and tried to pick Han Sen up.

Han Sen frowned, and so he quickly retreated and evaded the hand's grip. But the armored knight bent its legs and unleashed a horrible power. It suddenly accelerated forward and ran before Han Sen.

Han Sen was shocked. He used the Jadeskin's godlight to punch against the knight's hand. A metal noise rang out following the collision, but the knight was not hurt. Han Sen's hand, however, was left feeling numb.

Han Sen summoned his rabbit shoes and evaded the knight's hand that was coming for him again. He thought the armored knight could not catch up with him.

But the knight's speed increased again, and it actually revealed itself to be faster than the rabbit shoes. It caught up with Han Sen way too quickly, and Han Sen was unable to dodge. It simply grabbed Han Sen's body as easily as one would a doll.

Han Sen was shocked, but it was then that he realized the knight's hand was not exerting force. It put Han Sen in its palm and did not hurt him.

The knight's hand moved near its heart. That was where the little minks had been sucked into.

Han Sen simulated the power of the little minks and then placed his hand against the knight's heart. Quickly, the knight's heart lit up again. The light shone on Han Sen, drawing him in.

Chapter 1925 - Red Mist King

Chapter 1925 Red Mist King

Han Sen felt as if his body was taken through the red mist. He felt as if he was sinking. When his body came to a stop, he saw the seven minks wrapped up in the same plume of red mist, right next to him.

The red mist then cocooned itself around him, too. As the mist was attaching itself to him, a strange message penetrated his brain.

Han Sen found that he could read the little minks' thoughts, primarily because they were so small and so simple. Their emotions were easy to discern due to their simplicity, unlike humans that have a complex variety of feelings. It was something he couldn't have explained in words.

The stranger thing was when Han Sen noticed that the armored knight was trying to communicate with him. It spoke about how one would gain control of it.

That knight was called Red Mist King. Han Sen read its description and learned that it was like a wartime machine like the ones he had used in the Alliance. But Red Mist King wasn't built from circuits and electricity; it was actually comprised of xenogeneic material and little else.

He didn't need buttons to control it, either. All he had to do was use his mind, in addition to the red mist power.

It did not take much red mist power for a Viscount to control the machine. Red Mist King generated its own power, too. It had been built from a swathe of xenogeneic materials, and it possessed incredible strength. But every time it was used, some of the energy inside it would be consumed. So, it would have to be imbued with more xenogeneic materials to replenish its energy.

Han Sen sensed that most of its energy had already been spent, and that it only had around nine percent of its energy left. Han Sen did not understand how it worked, though.

The seven minks were getting very excited. Their thoughts could control the Red Mist King, too. The Red Mist King returned to the throne and sat down in its previous place.

Han Sen thought the minks were merely taking a break, but the equipment in the palace started up. With a whir, the lights of the equipment began to gleam. Even the throne itself started to shine. And then the dimension near the throne began to twist.

Before Han Sen could react, he saw the space of the place begin to twist. Red Mist King was sent out, and it appeared near a teleporter on a planet. The little minks merrily guided Red Mist King out of that teleporter, and what Han Sen saw surprised him.

Machines that looked like Red Mist King were everywhere. They each had a different shape and size. There were some like beasts or bugs, and there were even a few resembling livestock.

The buildings were built from a similar material, too. It looked like a mechanical planet straight out of a sci-fi movie.

Han Sen had seen all sorts of different xenogeneic materials. He knew that inside them, there had to be something like the little minks controlling them.

“Are there other minks inside these machines, too? Is it an entire race of them?” Han Sen was shocked at the mere thought.

But when Red Mist King walked out of the teleporter, alarm noises started to sound. Then, a language blared—one which Han Sen could not understand. At that moment, all the xenogeneic material machines turned to look at the Red Mist King. Han Sen thought things had gone pretty awry.

The next second, many xenogeneic machines were coming for Han Sen. Furthermore, they were aiming at Red Mist King. Their weapons were like lasers, and they started to fire at Red Mist King.

Han Sen could see that most of the lasers had Viscount class strength, but there were a few that were Earl class.

Boom!

After the chaos started to unfold, Red Mist King was sent soaring into a building with a crash. Han Sen felt every movement, but Red Mist King hadn't sustained any injuries.

The little minks were rolling around in the mist. They looked rather annoyed.

And then, Han Sen saw the joints of the armor begin to shine red. The minks controlled the Red Mist King's fists, which were now blazing with fire. It moved forward and punched an opponent.

Boom!

A giant beam of light came out of the fist. It destroyed the streets, buildings, and xenogeneic machines all around. Everything was broken or melted under the force.

A building that was a few hundred meters tall was vaporized, and a ten-meter-deep crater was all that remained. The path of destruction kept extending out, though, as if it was the end of the world. It felt as if everything there would be wiped out. The red mist didn't seem bound to the planet's surface, though. It reached out into the atmosphere, as if it was going out to space.

"Sh*t! That's strong." Han Sen was frozen. "That punch was the equivalent of a King class elite. That's scary."

After the initial shock, a flurry of surprises continued to come. The Red Mist King was very strong, and furthermore, Han Sen could control it. That meant Han Sen could be that strong and not have anything to be afraid of.

If Night River King came to provoke him again, Han Sen could punch him into the sky, regardless of whether or not he was a f*cking king.

But Han Sen's dream quickly came to a halt. The red mist had given him a lot of information, but one of the alerts was now warning him that the energy reserves were very low. It was lower than one percent now, at a figure of 0.75%.

“F*ck! One punch took away nine percent of its energy?” Han Sen was shocked.

He didn't dare hesitate now. He pulled the seven little minks closer, to prevent them from piloting the Red Mist King any further. Han Sen decided to take control of it, and he raced it back to the teleporter. The dimension twisted once again, and they vanished from the area.

When the vortex untwisted and deposited them back in normal space, they found themselves back inside the red copper palace. Han Sen was greatly relieved. The seven little minks, however, were looking rather angry. Han Sen quickly scanned their minds, and it allowed him to understand why they were as angry as they were.

They had merrily gone in there because, from what Han Sen could discern, they wanted to go home. But as soon as they teleported, they were treated like enemies. That was the source of their frustration.

But then Han Sen thought about the punch. Han Sen thought that the creatures of that planet might have every right to be as furious as they were.

Han Sen grabbed the seven little minks, in case they decided to drive the Red Mist King back. Red Mist King had next to no energy, so Han Sen wasn't sure if it could return from another trip through the teleporter.

Han Sen brought them all the way out of the red mist orb so he could keep an eye on them. He went on the internet to find out what he could about the red mist orb, Red Mist King, and the little minks.

Chapter 1926 - Watching a Ceremony

Chapter 1926 Watching a Ceremony

Fortunately, now that he was a student of someone who was half-deified, Han Sen had some level of authority across Narrow Moon. It gave him access to information that the ordinary Rebates were not permitted to know.

Han Sen could not find out anything about the origin of the red mist orb, but he was able to learn about the red mist minks and the Red Mist King.

In the geno universe, there was a race called Meka. In truth, it wasn't one fixed race, but a title that included a number of subspecies and different blood lineages. So, because of their extreme diversity, the Meka couldn't be considered a higher race like the Feathers were. Even if their strength exceeded that of some higher races.

Even if one of the Meka managed to light a geno lantern, it wouldn't be enough to enable all Meka to be considered a higher race; there were too many differences in the blood between them all.

The Meka's xenogeneic space included everything from pigs to snakes. There were still so many different types of creatures that were considered Meka that it was difficult to keep track of them all.

But there was one connecting thread, and that was a talent shared by all the Meka. They could consume xenogeneic genes and create a new material inside their own bodies.

The Meka used these materials to create xenogeneic battle bodies, creations that were similar to the Red Mist King.

But in order to be used, xenogeneic battle bodies required a power that belonged solely to the Meka. So, if you were not one of the Meka, and you had a xenogeneic battle body, you would not be able to operate it.

“Without a doubt, those little minks belong to the Meka. They’re related in some way, leastways. But if that’s the case, then why were they born here? And why was the Red Mist King here? The Meka need a lot of xenogeneic genes to create xenogeneic battle bodies, and the red mist spring had a lot of spring water. That means many xenogeneics died here. These two have to be related in some way,” Han Sen thought.

But this was all he could conjecture. He couldn’t make any further guesses, as the information he had discovered did not talk about the red mist minks and the Red Mist King specifically.

Han Sen tried to use xenogeneic gene ingredients to fill up the Red Mist King’s energy, but he soon realized that it wasn’t working.

This was because xenogeneic genes had to be eaten by the red mist minks, who would then release the energy they had gained. That was the top-up process for the Red Mist King. The red mist minks were too small right now, however, so they couldn’t eat much. And they were also slow to generate energy.

Han Sen let them eat as many Baron xenogeneic genes as they were capable. But by doing so, they were only able to generate 0.01% percent of the needed energy each day. And that was with all seven of them working together. God only knew how long it would take for the batteries to fill up.

Han Sen discovered that Red Mist King’s planet—the one they had gone to—belonged to the Meka’s xenogeneic space. Red Mist King’s arrival had been a big event for the Meka, and there was a lot of news coverage on it.

Han Sen was happy he had managed to get out of there quickly. If the Meka King class sorts found him, he didn’t know if he could have made it out alive.

Planet Eclipse had been quiet for a while. After a few days, Black Steel sent him a message inviting him to Planet Black- Moon to observe a ceremony. The ceremony was about forging a knife. The knife was forged already, so this was more of an opening ceremony for the weapon.

The Black family wouldn't invite others if it was an ordinary knife, but this was different. Black-Moon King had spent a hundred years to forge a King class knife. And that was why he wished to arrange a ceremony that others could attend.

Not just anyone was qualified to watch, either. Most of the invites were sent to King class elites. A few lower level subordinates could follow after their Kings, but they weren't allowed to be there when the ceremony was taking place.

No other Viscounts like Han Sen received a direct invitation, and only three or four Dukes received a direct invite. They were Black-Moon King's friends.

Although Han Sen was not particularly interested in attending a ceremony, Yisha told him that Black-Moon King was going out of his way to include Han Sen. Black-Moon King had always spoken positively about Han Sen, so he had no qualms in agreeing to the invite and going.

On the day of the ceremony, Black-Moon King called for a spacecraft to collect Han Sen. Yisha also received an invitation, but she wasn't going, so Han Sen had to go alone.

When he reached Planet Black-Moon, Black Steel invited Han Sen to join him in watching the ceremony. Han Sen realized he was sitting in the same spot Yisha was supposed to.

That also meant he was sitting next to Moon Wheel King and a few of the other Kings. Rebecca and Qing Li could only stand someplace in the back, as they hadn't been honored with seats.

Han Sen wasn't very concerned about the situation, though. He had seen too much in his lifetime, so paltry things like social awkwardness no longer bothered him. He simply acted

cool while he drank his tea. He wasn't unnerved by the proximity of Moon Wheel King and the others.

But the Kings took tiers seriously. To them, Han Sen was a small fry, so there was no need to converse with him. That meant no one talked to Han Sen.

Half an hour later, no one had yet seen Black-Moon King or the King class weapon he was supposed to present. Just as Han Sen was wondering when the event was going to begin, Black-Moon King appeared atop the peak of a stone mountain.

Han Sen was surprised, and he thought, "I thought this was a ceremony. What is he doing up a mountain?"

Moon Wheel King smiled and said, "That stony mountain is a whetstone. It is a xenogeneic gene from a King class rocky giant. A long time ago, a King of the Black family slew it. And ever since, they have used it as a whetstone. When a King class weapon is forged, it is revealed here. This is the third time I have seen this."

"Are King class weapons that hard to forge?" Han Sen was shocked. The Black family had a long history, but after all that time, they had only managed to forge three?

Moon Wheel King smiled. "Not exactly. The Black family has forged more than three King class weapons, but those were mostly created from creatures. They don't show them off. Only King class weapons that are created entirely by the Black family's hands will have a ceremony."

After a while, Moon Wheel King said, "This ceremony is special. Black-Moon King is taking this very seriously. The weapon is named after Narrow Moon."

Han Sen was curious about this. He wondered what sort of knife would be granted the title of Narrow Moon. Narrow Moon was as big as the Rebate themselves were. The blade had to be special to be named after it.

Chapter 1927 - Opening the Knife

Chapter 1927 Opening the Knife

Black-Moon King stood quietly on top of the mountain. He drew out a knife.

Han Sen thought a King class knife would radiate, but the knife in his hands did not. This was a knife that was narrow like a crescent moon, but it was black, and it did not reflect a speck of light. It was as dark as the night.

Han Sen looked at the knife and figured that it was probably only about three feet long. He wondered why it would have to be ground and sharpened on a mountain-sized whetstone.

Black-Moon King had not added the finishing touches yet, so he put his hand on the mountain. And then, the yellowish mountain produced waves of water. The waves rose at the bottom of the mountain and surged up towards the top, headed for the peak. They gathered atop the peak, and atop a rock there.

That rock had a deep groove, and when the water waves reached it, they poured down into it.

Black-Moon King stood in front of the watery stone. He held two knives and looked very serious. It looked as if he wasn't holding two knives, but instead, two sacrifices.

The black blade was planted on the rock by Black-Moon King. The knife was fifteen degrees away from the rock, and at that angle, he began to grind it.

When Han Sen was in the Alliance, he became interested in blacksmithing. He wasn't, however, interested in forging knives. Z-Steel products had to be refined to make them sharp, although beast soul weapons needed nothing of the sort.

But creating a knife and refining it in the geno universe was different. A weapon that had been created from xenogeneic materials could fix itself. That was, assuming it hadn't been

too badly damaged. But overall, there was no need for maintenance and refinement. They looked after themselves.

This was the first time Han Sen had seen a xenogeneic weapon being created. While he wondered what the point of the refinement was, a light sparked between the knife and the whetstone.

That light was as warm as the sunrise. When you looked closely, the black blade had teeth marks on it.

Black-Moon King continued refining the knife, his movements slow and methodical.

The grinding was like the moaning of a newborn baby.

Han Sen was shocked. This was obviously not as simple as refining a Z-Steel blade, so Han Sen was glad he had come to watch the event.

Everyone watched intently as Black-Moon King continued grinding the knife. No one spoke, as they were worried they might interrupt his focus.

On its third pass over the whetstone, the black knife began to glow with a strange light. It looked like a jagged moon rising. The warm and clear light was coming down, and it gave the onlookers a chill. Everyone felt like they were naked under the glare of that light, and they imagined it had shaved off all their hair.

After the fourth pass, another tooth appeared on the moonlike knife.

Every time Black-Moon King ground the knife against the whetstone, a moon-tooth rose. They were small to begin with, but a full moon soon started to take shape. And then, a broken moon. And then, it disappeared.

The moon above the mountain kept changing. A lot of cold moonlight came down. It was like Narrow Moon and the moonlight were interacting with each other.

It was hard to see when the moon and the shadows combined. It was like the whole world only had the knife and the moon left. It made people feel as if they were intoxicated.

The grinding sounds reverberated in the audience's ears. Every time the knife scraped across the stone, moonlight came down from the sky to imbue the knife with a greater brightness.

From dark to bright, from bright to dark. The strange scene began to fade, and the knife was sharpened. There was no more knifelight to observe. It was black, like absolute darkness.

At this time, Black-Moon King pulled the knife away from the whetstone. It seemed to have been finished.

The water waves on the mountain got smaller and smaller, and disappeared. The mountain returned to its yellow color. Han Sen felt strange about this, and he thought, "Has he finished grinding it?"

As Han Sen was thinking about this, Black-Moon King began walking down the mountain with the knife. He walked in front of the pavilions that Han Sen was watching from.

Han Sen could feel nervousness rising from the Kings around him. Maybe there was some excitement; either way, it all seemed so strange.

"Moon Wheel, can you open the spirit of this knife?" Black-Moon King held the knife in both hands as he bowed sincerely before Moon Wheel King.

Moon Wheel King stood up and said, "If I can open the spirit of this knife, I would consider it an absolute honor."

After that, Moon Wheel King exited the pavilion and walked with Black-Moon King. He accepted the knife from him carefully. Rebecca and Du Lishe watched their father go to open the spirit of the Narrow Moon blade. They looked excited, as the other Kings looked disappointed.

Black-Moon King handed the knife to Moon Wheel King. With great seriousness, he said, “Please use your Moon Wheel powers to open this.”

Everyone was in shock, and Han Sen had no idea what was going on, so he just watched intently.

Moon Wheel King nodded and took the blade in his hands. His body began to glow with moonlight. Black-Moon King fell back to the pavilion.

Han Sen looked at Moon Wheel King. He had heard Moon Wheel King was as strong as Yisha, but Han Sen didn’t really know much about him. And when Han Sen spoke with him, he didn’t seem remarkable at all. He was like your average, middle-aged man.

But he was now holding that prestigious knife, tasked with unearthing the knife’s power. He was basking in the elegance of radiant moonlight. He was like an angel that had just come from the sky, and not a single speck of dust could ever fathom touching him.

The moonlight floated into the black weapon. Its body soon lit up.

It was not quite shining, as it was just moonlight. There was no sign of fire, but it felt gentle. It was quiet and warm. Bzzt!

Everyone’s knife began to buzz. They all wanted to hop out of their scabbards.

Han Sen looked at Ghost Teeth Knife. It did not make any noise, but it looked hostile. It didn’t seem to be fond of its same kind.

The moonlight started to get colder and colder, and all the knives in Narrow Moon were crying. It was as if they were really welcoming the birth of a new King.

But Han Sen’s biggest point of interest did not rest with the King class weapon. It was all about the power Moon Wheel King had inserted into it. Moon Wheel King’s power was pure, unlike Yisha’s. Moon Wheel King’s power was soft. It did not feel intimidating, and it would be easy to ignore.

Han Sen didn't dare underestimate that power, though. In fact, he felt more alert than usual.

But the reason Han Sen focused on Moon Wheel's power was not because he was strong; it was because the power reminded him of Moon, the geno art Yisha had given him.

Chapter 1928 - Narrow Moon Knife

Chapter 1928 Narrow Moon Knife

Moon was a softer geno art. To create light, you could not use pure power.

When Yisha gave Moon to Han Sen, she hadn't shown him how to perform it. Han Sen believed this was because she herself was not well-versed with Moon, and even if she knew how to perform it, she couldn't do it spectacularly well.

That was because Yisha's power was too brutal. It lacked a softer finesse that was required. A geno art like Moon needed a gentler touch, and therefore, Yisha could not learn it.

Han Sen had wondered why she wanted him to learn it. He hadn't shown her his gentle power, and Yisha didn't excel at it herself. But even so, she had given him Moon to learn.

After much deliberation, Han Sen was able to understand the reason.

Yisha was still suspicious of him. It hadn't gone away after Han Sen displayed his talents in the battle for Red Mist Valley. Moon might very well be another test for him.

Han Sen tried to think of things through her perspective, and by doing so, it was not too difficult to understand. If he performed very well with Teeth Knife, but not well enough on another brand new geno art, there was plenty of space for suspicion.

Of course, Han Sen could not confirm this was truly Yisha's line of thought. But even so, he kept on practicing with Moon to avoid being exposed.

Now, seeing Moon Wheel King's power allowed Han Sen to understand a lot more about gentle powers. He could not directly feel the power that Moon Wheel King was using, however. If he had, he'd have been able to learn a whole lot more.

Boom!

As Han Sen mulled over all this, he suddenly saw a moon appear in the sky. The moonlight gathered across the weapon Moon Wheel King was holding.

Moon Wheel King slashed up towards the sky. The curve looked like that of an actual moon, slicing through the air. And the moon appeared up there in the sky, unmoving.

Everyone's knives jumped out of their sheaths, no longer able to control themselves.

"This surely gets things done." Moon Wheel King put away his light and passed the Narrow Moon Knife back to Black- Moon King.

Black-Moon King looked happy. He accepted the knife and said, "Thank you for your help. Without the assistance of your Moon Wheel power in unlocking the blade's spirit, it would not be perfect."

Han Sen was looking at the knifelight that was hanging in the sky like a moon. Instead of fading away in time, it just remained where it was, hovering like a genuine moon.

That is powerful. The knifelight has yet to fade away. If Moon Wheel King does not forcibly remove it, I am unsure as to how long it will last. Would it stay there forever?" Han Sen thought to himself.

A gentle power such as that surprised him.

Teeth Knife powers could break stuff, but that was an example of raw strength. It consumed its opponents through sheer force.

Moon Wheel King's knifelight wasn't like that, though. The power gathered up, and it wouldn't be affected by external forces. It didn't fade away, and that was scary to comprehend.

In a fight, if a strike did not hit its target, the power would extinguish.

But Moon Wheel King's knifelight did not go away at all. It remained where it was, like a timebomb. If Moon Wheel King could still control it, that would be even scarier. This was similar to Han Sen's Saving Money, but without the time limitation. Regardless, Han Sen thought it was quite meaningful. He wanted to take the time to research Moon Wheel King's knifelight some more.

But alas, he could not do that. The knifelight was still in the sky, yes, but he did not have an aircraft to get close to it.

He still watched and stared at the knifelight, and as he did, Black-Moon King handed the knife to Flower King so the Kings could each inspect it.

Han Sen was so happy about this. If he could see it up close, he could research it. And if he did that, he might be able to learn a thing or two.

Narrow Moon Knife had a soft Moon power in it. That was likely because it had been finished through Moon Wheel powers. The end result was that the power the blade wielded would likely be similar to that which Moon Wheel King possessed.

He couldn't research Moon Wheel King himself, but he might be able to research Narrow Moon Knife.

"I don't know if they will let me see Narrow Moon Knife," Han Sen thought to himself.

Now, only a few Kings were looking at it. The lower tier folk were unable to get more than a glimpse. They most certainly weren't allowed to hold it like the Kings were.

There were a lot of Kings there, too. And if Han Sen didn't get the opportunity to hold it for a brief time, he'd be unable to use his Dongxuan Aura to quickly scan it. He'd end up walking away without learning anything.

Ordinarily, Han Sen would not have been allowed to hold it. He was so very young, and he was not qualified.

But on this day, he had been invited to attend alone. In a way, he was there to represent Yisha. So, there was a chance he'd be allowed.

Han Sen started to pray. "Please let me hold it. I don't know if I'll get another chance at this."

Flower King, and the others, were all looking at it. Each and every one sang praises about it.

"There are many King class weapons here, but only this one can truly represent us," Moon Wheel King complimented the blade.

Black-Moon King was so happy, he smiled and said, "Actually, I am thinking about giving this to Moon God's Palace. It could be used as a sacrifice for the Moon God."

Every King was shocked to hear this. Moon Wheel King said, "You are so generous! The Rebate are fortunate to have you."

All the Kings praised him. They never expected Black-Moon King would be willing to sacrifice such a powerful knife. He was extremely generous, and this was not something the average King would ever think about doing.

"You are welcome. This Knife was forged with the purpose of becoming a sacrifice, anyway. Until I succeeded in crafting it, I kept my work under wraps. I didn't want to say something prematurely, and then disappoint you."

Han Sen felt bored hearing such talk. If Narrow Moon Knife was always in the Black-Moon family, he could have inspected it through the friendship he shared with Black Steel.

If it became a sacrifice, that would suck. Aside from the major priests, no one would be able to touch it.

The Kings that were looking at Narrow Moon Knife all complimented it highly. Han Sen, on the other hand, looked as if he was suffering.

The Kings, when they finished looking, handed the knife back over to Black-Moon King. Han Sen's heart was thumping in his chest.

There were only a few Dukes, and Han Sen was unable to get a look. He didn't know if Black-Moon King would be so kind as to let him make a proper inspection of the weapon.

If Black-Moon King allowed the other Dukes to see it, he'd have no chance.

Chapter 1929 - The Moon After the Dark Clouds

Chapter 1929 The Moon After the Dark Clouds

Black-Moon King's eyes soon came to rest on Han Sen. He smiled and said, "Han Sen is here to represent Knife. You will have to come take a proper look, so you can sing its praises to her and have her regret passing on the opportunity to come to the unveiling."

After that, Black-Moon King passed the Narrow Moon Knife over to Han Sen.

Han Sen was delighted, and so he quickly accepted the knife. He switched on his Dongxuan Aura to scan and observe it as soon as it touched his hands. The knife had been activated by Moon Wheel King, and its activity was still vibrant. It was gleaming with that Moon Wheel power, and the lunar power was still humming.

"Good knife! That is a good knife." Han Sen deliberately touched the body of the blade, feigning admiration for it.

The Kings there could feel Han Sen's power shroud the blade, though. People believed Han Sen was using some power to examine the knife. Everyone watched Han Sen closely; the Dukes, in particular. They were waiting for him to finish, so they might get their own turn at examining the blade.

People like Rebecca looked on Han Sen with jealousy. They had seen King class weapons before, like the ones possessed by their elders. But Narrow Moon Knife was an entirely different thing. It was a sacrifice, given in honor of the Rebate at large. Aside from the most important priests, no one would be able to see it after it was given as a sacrifice. Holding it would be even more unlikely.

Everyone was looking at Han Sen. Han Sen was holding it very carefully, and he kept saying over and over, "Good knife! Such a good knife."

Han Sen kept saying those few phrases repeatedly. While he might have liked to say something more, he could not muster the words to speak.

And at any other time, he would have spoken fairer praises about the blade. But right now, he was focused on the knife itself. The fanciness of his compliments took a backseat to his keen examination of the knife.

Many people were watching him, though. It'd be pretty bad if he was just to stand there without speaking.

So, Han Sen kept standing where he was, looking at the knife. He continued to repeat how good the knife was. His repetition of the phrases was into the dozens.

The Kings believed he wasn't an educated person, and so his lexicon was limited. He had been there for ten minutes, saying such basic things over and over, after all. It made them feel rather disheartened, all in all.

The other Kings had only spent a minute each, observing the blade before handing it back over to Black-Moon King. None of them had taken longer than a minute.

Han Sen had spoken two sentences and stared at the blade for ten minutes by now. The Kings' were not reacting well to the time that Han Sen was taking.

Fortunately, Rebecca and the others were educated in decorum. No one was willing to speak out during circumstances like that. Ordinary Nobles of elsewhere would be yelling at Han Sen by now.

Han Sen did not care what the others were thinking right now, though. So, he kept saying, "Good knife! That is a good knife," for another few minutes.

The Dukes did look as if they were ready to murder someone, but their grimaces went uncared for by Han Sen. He kept looking at the blade, repeating his compliments.

Half an hour went by. The faces of the Kings had become livid. Black-Moon King eventually said, “Han Sen, why don’t you take a break. Black Steel has something he wishes to speak with you about.”

Han Sen knew he could not delay things any longer. So, he acquiesced and gave the knife back to Black-Moon King. He didn’t want to let go of it, though. Black-Moon King had to pull it out of Han Sen’s tight grip. Sitting on his chair, Han Sen looked depressed. He was reviewing all that he had learned from the knife.

The knife had Moon Wheel King’s power and Moon power in it. After using the Dongxuan Sutra, he had been able to learn a lot.

“It is no wonder Black-Moon King allowed Moon Wheel King to be the one that opened the knife. Moon Wheel King’s power is like that of a gentle moon. He was most suitable for its use,” Han Sen thought.

Han Sen had heard Moon Wheel King’s story. Moon Wheel King was one of the Rebate that was half-deified, and he had not hailed from Moon Garden.

The story went that Moon Wheel King was not talented in his younger years, and that he came from a commoner family. When he generated a geno armor, he wasn’t even able to evolve a second time. But then, he came into possession of a treasure that accelerated his second evolution, and also turned him into a xenogeneic.

Moon Wheel King was a xenogeneic and not a Noble. That was a rare status amongst the Rebate.

Because Moon Wheel King did not have much talent, the first geno art he practiced with was Moonlight. It was one of the most common geno arts the Rebate could learn.

But Moon Wheel King used Moonlight with a fusion of his own power, and he had become a King over time. Now, he was a half-deified legend.

To the entire Rebate society, Moon Wheel King was a mythical figure. He was practically an idol for everyone.

He was different from someone like Yisha, who was born with talent. The Nobles admired Moon Wheel King more.

They wished for themselves to be like Moon Wheel King, and because of this, his reputation was favored over Yisha's.

Moonlight had not changed over time, and he had used that geno art to reach the status of being half-deified. Even Han Sen thought Moon Wheel King was nothing short of awesome.

Moonlight should have stopped getting any better when he reached Earl class, but after Moon Wheel King modified it, he had managed to create a higher tier for it. The Rebate showed him great respect, and so in honor of his abilities and reputation, the Rebate granted the higher tiers of Moonlight the title of Moon Wheel. Moonlight was still kept as the name for the common version.

Basically, Moon Wheel was the use of a moon's power. Moon Wheel King's gentleness made people always wonder how he did what he did.

Fortunately, Han Sen had Dongxuan Aura to see Moon Wheel and the knife's Moon power. It greatly enthralled him.

Most people, when pushed far enough, would concede. But Moon Wheel King's mind, while it was gentle, it was not soft. It was pure, but it wasn't dumb. He was like a cloud going by without leaving a trace. Very few could do what he could.

Everyone wanted a smooth life like Yisha's, but normal people would find themselves rolling around in the mud. But very few could emerge from the pit with a pure heart intact.

Moon Wheel King had done this, though. His life's journey had led him through many different environments. His life could have forced him to compromise. His heart, however, was like the moon itself. It would never change.

Seeing Narrow Moon's feelings and Moon Wheel power, Han Sen saw a clear moon emerge. It was the moon coming out from behind the clouds.

Chapter 1930 - Moon

Chapter 1930 Moon

The Dukes didn't look at the blade in the same way Han Sen had. They all looked at it for less than a minute before handing it back over to Black-Moon King. The entire thing was done in a few minutes.

The young ones were not allowed to look at it by themselves. After they had all seen it, the ceremony came to a close. Black-Moon King invited a few Kings and Dukes over for tea. Some accepted and stayed, others declined and left.

Black Steel invited Rebecca and a few of the other young ones to the garden for a chat, Han Sen included.

So, Han Sen followed Black Steel to the garden. There, he sat down. Aside from Han Sen, everyone seemed to be acquainted with one another. So, there was no formal etiquette to follow.

Without Black-Moon King around, they were prone to speaking far more openly than they ordinarily would. As they began chatting, not a single person was left out. But with that being said, Han Sen did not say a word. Han Sen did not know anyone there except for Black Steel, and so he retreated into his mind to mull over what he had learned with the knife. He didn't care for their topics of conversation.

Du Lishe, noticing that Han Sen wasn't speaking with them, hummed and said, "Genius Han, you looked at Narrow Moon Knife for so long. And you kept saying it was so good, you could obviously detect something we could not. Why don't you tell us what you saw, so that we too can learn it."

After Du Lishe said that, everyone turned to look at Han Sen. They were curious whether Han Sen really had learned something, or if it was all some sort of act.

Han Sen's eyes were closed, still reviewing what he had learned. He hadn't noticed Du Lishe was talking to him. His eyes were shut tight, and it appeared as if he was ignoring her.

Du Lishe, noticing him ignoring her, looked mad and did not say anything more.

Du Lishe's silence did not mean others wouldn't say anything, though. She was Moon Wheel King's second daughter. She was pretty, and she was talented. She had many admirers.

The young ones that sat there with them were admirers of Rebecca and Du Lishe. Now that Han Sen had apparently ignored her, someone could not help but stand up for her.

"Didn't he tell you what he saw?" a Viscount called Kriman asked dubiously.

"What did he say?" Du Lishe asked.

Everyone looked at Kriman, but everyone knew he wasn't going to say anything nice.

Kriman laughed. "Didn't you grow ears? Genius Han said it was a good knife. He said it many times."

Kriman spoke it in the tone Han Sen had, and Du Lishe laughed. "Ha!"

Kriman over-enunciated his words, laughing at Han Sen and pretending to understand, which made many people there laugh. The elegant ones smiled.

Han Sen sat where he was without emotion. He was deep in thought. He was afraid that occupying his mind with something else for a while would make him forget important details. So, he still did not hear them.

Han Sen continued to ignore the group. Black Steel frowned and said, "Han Sen has his reasons for viewing the knife the way he did."

Black Steel did not know how to participate in that particular debate, so this was what he said.

Kriman did not respect Black Steel. He only wanted to stand up for Du Lishe in the hopes of getting closer to her, and so he said, “Black Steel, you know knives. Similar actions from you might make sense, but I can’t feel the same for other people. He looked at it for half an hour, repeating the same two sentences over and over. If he is not educated, don’t pretend he is. This is the first time I’ve ever seen someone so dumb.”

“Kriman, mind your tongue.” Black Steel’s face looked grim.

Kriman smiled and said, “I don’t beat around the bush. If I have said something that is incorrect, then you can have him point out the mistake. If he can convince everyone, I will earnestly apologize.”

Sad Night and Night Giant King, who had a grudge with Han Sen, looked over angrily and said, “Yes! If he saw something, let us hear what it is that he saw. If it makes sense, then we will apologize, too. What is the point in just saying that the knife was good, over and over.”

Black Steel could see Han Sen still sitting where he was, not saying a word. He touched him and said, “If you are willing to, you can tell people.”

Black Steel understood Han Sen. He knew Han Sen had seen something the others hadn’t, and that was why he stared at it for so long. What Han Sen saw wasn’t anyone else’s business, of course. Black Steel would not push Han Sen to explain if he wasn’t willing to.

But now that the people were saying things like this, Black Steel could not stand by and watch. He was worried for Han Sen. If Han Sen did not say something, his reputation would suffer. No one ever let a person’s reputation go.

Outsiders had a tough life in Narrow Moon. Han Sen had built himself a good reputation. Black Steel thought it would be a shame if it was destroyed now.

After being touched by Black Steel, Han Sen woke up from his daze. Han Sen looked confused, hearing what he said. And so, he asked, “Tell people what?”

He hadn't heard anything else that had been spoken. All he had heard was what Black Steel had spoken to him.

But when that went into the ears of Kriman and the others, they misunderstood. They thought Han Sen was admitting he didn't know or see anything. Hence why he had nothing to say.

Kriman laughed and said, "Black Steel, you heard him. I didn't misplace my blame. I admire Genius Han for one thing only: his shamelessness. He didn't learn anything, despite staring at it for half an hour. I couldn't bring myself to do such a thing."

Sad Night coldly laughed and said, "Because he is a genius, isn't that right? He isn't like us. He is already so smart, he was able to tell us the shocking fact that it was a good knife. What more can we expect?"

Han Sen heard that and quickly understood what was going on without even needing to ask Black Steel.

Seeing Kriman and Sad Night speak, Han Sen coldly said, "I won't tell you, but my teacher did teach me something. Instead of using words, I can perform, and what I perform will make you smile."

"We would like to see what shocking performance you could do for us. You are not going to perform the astounding Speech of Good again, are you?" Kriman spoke strangely.

He thought Han Sen was changing the topic, hence why he was repeating the same insults. He didn't want Han Sen to escape this.

Han Sen smiled. He casually said, "I learned a geno art called Moon."

Chapter 1931 - The Moon's Reflection on Water

Chapter 1931 The Moon's Reflection on Water

Han Sen's desire to perform Moon had little to do with satisfying Kriman.

Han Sen thought learning Moon was a challenge from Yisha, so he wanted to prove to Yisha that he was a genius. He didn't want her suspicions taking root.

Han Sen wouldn't have dared to perform Moon before today, though. After all, he wasn't smart enough to learn something from a brief look. He had practiced Moon for quite some time, and he knew that if he had done it prior to seeing Narrow Moon Knife, the quality of his performance would not have befitted a genius.

Examining Narrow Moon Knife changed this. That was why Han Sen was now confident to perform Moon there. He was confident he could quell Yisha's fears now.

"Moon?" Rebecca and Du Lishe were shocked; it was Moon Wheel King's geno art, and they knew it, too. They had learned it from Moon Wheel King himself when they were young, and it was something they were still practicing with.

Kriman coldly laughed and said, "You are daring to practice Moon in front of Rebecca and Du Lishe? That is hardly appropriate."

Everyone knew Rebecca and Du Lishe were excellent with the art. They were surprised that Han Sen had expressed his desire to perform it.

Han Sen smiled and ignored Kriman. Then he said, "My teacher taught me Moon. I have been trying to learn it for some time, but my understanding of it has failed. I suddenly learned it when I looked at the knife. I don't know if this is correct, so please correct me."

When everyone heard him say this, they all went quiet. Kriman swallowed the words he was going to speak, and coldly said, “Okay. Let’s see how Moon correlates with Narrow Moon Knife.”

Han Sen looked around and stopped his gaze on the teacup. He filled the cup up with water, then placed it back down on the table. Rebecca and the others were watching him, keenly wondering how he was going to do in his performance of Moon.

Han Sen gave them a swift answer. He pointed to the middle of the teacup and fired an arrow of light at it.

When the light entered the water, there was no impact. It was like a reflection of the moon, hovering on the surface of the water.

“What do you guys think of my Moon?” Han Sen lowered his hands and smiled.

Kriman laughed mockingly and said, “I thought you learned something amazing from the knife. The reflection of the moon is something only a beginner might have learned. You are much worse than Rebecca and Du Lishe.”

“Then can I take a look at the Moon of the two ladies?” Han Sen looked at Rebecca and Du Lishe with great interest. Rebecca felt worried. Du Lishe didn’t hesitate, though, and she simply said’ “Why not?”

After that, Du Lishe filled up her teacup with water. Then, she looked at Han Sen. “This is just a beginner move on Moon. I was able to do it by the time I became Viscount. I can generate three moons, so I am worse than my big sister. Please do not laugh at my Moon if it is bad.”

“Three lunar reflections? That is much better than one!” Sad Night looked at Han Sen.

Du Lishe smiled and did not say anything. She used her right fingers. Three fingers created three moons upon the surface of the teacup’s contents.

When the moons entered, no ripples were formed. But those three moons almost filled up the entire teacup. It looked strange.

“Sorry, I did that poorly.” Du Lishe was actually satisfied with her performance. She was being cocky, and a little provocative to Han Sen. Her eyebrows were raised slyly.

“Good! These three moon reflections are great. It is no wonder you are the heir of Moon Wheel King.” Kriman loudly complimented her.

Sad Night followed his example, too. He wasn’t bluffing, though. Du Lishe really had performed exceptionally well.

The people there had all learned Moon, but like Han Sen, they could only cast one moon. They couldn’t do two. Du Lishe was able to do three because she had learned the skill directly from Moon Wheel King.

Sad Night looked at Han Sen strangely. “Genius Han, is that what you learned from the knife? Perhaps it is best not to compare it to Du Lishe. Even the rest of us, who didn’t learn from Moon Wheel King or stare at the knife for half an hour, can still do a reflection like yours. We didn’t need half an hour.”

“Three moon reflections? This is great. I have learned a lot,” Han Sen said emotionlessly.

Then, he stood up and told Black Steel, “I have something to do. I will talk to you later.”

Han Sen said that and left. He didn’t want to interact with those people. He’d rather practice what he had learned while the memory was still fresh in his mind.

“I will walk you out,” Black Steel said.

Han Sen shook his head. He didn’t have a good relationship with the other heirs of Kings, and he didn’t want Black Steel to end up isolated like he was.

“Running off like that? He sucks.” Kriman smiled.

“Of course. Did you expect him to just let you insult him?” Someone laughed.

“He deserved it. I don’t like people who keep pretending,” Kriman said darkly.

Han Sen was not in their circle, so it did not affect them too much. Now, they returned to being happier and more friendly with each other.

Du Lishe felt really good, too. She had finally shown off in front of Han Sen with success. She was smiling and smiling, and she just couldn’t stop.

Rebecca didn’t look so happy, though. She felt as if something was amiss, but she couldn’t put her fingers on exactly what was wrong.

As everyone talked, a Viscount accidentally knocked over a geno fluid and dirtied a seat, so he moved to Han Sen’s seat.

Han Sen’s cup was still there. The Viscount reached for the cup, wanting to swap it for a new one, but when he just touched the teacup, his face changed and he screamed, “What the f*ck?!”

As everyone was talking merrily, hearing him scream made everyone turn to look at him. Kriman laughed and said, “What are you screaming about?”

“Look! Look at this cup.” The Viscount pointed at the cup and looked at it strangely.

“What about the cup?” Kriman asked.

“This is Han Sen’s cup. Look closer!” The Viscount did not know how to explain, so he picked it up and moved it over.

Chapter 1932 - Gentle and Pure

Chapter 1932 Gentle and Pure

Everyone looked towards the cup that the Viscount was holding. They heard a cracking sound, then the cup shattered. The pieces and the water splashed down to the table.

Rebecca and the others saw it shatter, and then their eyes widened. Amidst the broken shards of ceramic, there was a moon-like thing. It was still floating where the cup had been.

Du Lishe was simply frozen, and could not speak.

Rebecca's face changed, and she asked the Viscount, "Did Han Sen really use that teacup?"

The Viscount said, "Yes, I was sitting next to him. I saw everything he did, and that cup has not been touched since."

"But he has been gone for half an hour. How can the Moon still be there, and how could it have broken the cup? That surely isn't Moon." Kriman looked at the sisters with confusion.

The reflection in the water was the beginning of Moon. Putting light in the water wasn't something that was supposed to last, as it didn't physically exist. It would fade away quickly without a source of power to keep pumping into it.

Han Sen had been gone for half an hour, and the shape in the water still remained. That meant it wasn't just an illusion. The light was something solid. It had broken the cup, which no illusion could do.

Rebecca stood up and walked over to Han Sen's seat. She looked at the light, examining it with a strange expression.

The others came over to surround it, too. Kriman said, "Rebecca, is this Moon? That guy isn't playing a trick on us, is he?"

Rebecca looked down at the bright moon and said, "It is. And it is much better than what Du Lishe and I can do. It has the secrets of Moon Wheel in it."

"The secrets of Moon Wheel?" Everyone was shocked.

When Rebecca mentioned Moon Wheel, it got everyone's attention.

Rebecca pointed at the light and said, "Do you see? This is a solid light. This isn't just a mere shadow. This is not a reflection. It is a real moon. But it should be impossible for a solid moon to enter the water without at least causing ripples. Everything that touches water should deform it, unless you had the extremely gentle touch of something like Moon Wheel."

"Rebecca, you and Du Lishe can do something like this, yes?" Sad Night asked Rebecca.

Rebecca shook her head, "My Father practiced Moon Wheel to a half-deified status. This skill stems from Moonlight, so it is easy to learn, but difficult to practice. Not everyone can bring it up to its highest tier. Du Lishe hasn't practiced Moon Wheel at all. I have practiced it, but I am far from gentle enough to do this. You would have to be a Duke or a King to avoid disturbing the water."

Everyone's faces changed. Kriman's face looked particularly bad, and he asked, "Is it really that hard? Han Sen did not practice Moon Wheel, and he is just a Viscount that practiced Moon. How could he do such a thing? Look closer. He might have tried to trick us or something."

Rebecca peered into the light for a while, before giving up with a wry smile. "This is Moon, yes. I don't know how he managed to do this. I have only seen a casting of such quality from my father. Maybe he really did learn something from the Narrow Moon Knife."

When everyone heard that, they were struck with speechlessness. Kriman's face was twitching, and it burned.

Du Lishe blushed. She had been so cocky about her generation of three moons, but now, she realized her performance wasn't anywhere near the same level.

"How can such a genius exist here in this universe? By just looking at a knife and hoping to learn a geno art? This is something most people might never accomplish if they spent their entire lifetime on such an endeavor," Sad Night said in a frustrated tone.

Rebecca responded simply, "It is easy to discern the truth. The Moon has been here for half an hour. The power is still here. That tells us he has a very strong, but gentle, power. If this moon can remain here for a few days, he must have learned the secrets of Moon Wheel. The light I can cast only lasts a day at the most. And on top of that, the water would be disturbed."

"We can't wait here for a few days," said the Viscount that moved the cup.

"I don't believe he could have learned the secrets of purity and gentleness from that knife. My father should still be around. We should seek him out and have him take a look. Then we will know the truth." Du Lishe stood up and looked for Moon Wheel King.

Everyone wanted to know whether or not Han Sen possessed the talent to be so pure and gentle. They did not stop her. Rebecca and Black Steel also went out in search of Moon Wheel King.

Moon Wheel King was talking with a few other Kings. He felt something, and Black-Moon King said, "Let them in."

Du Lishe and the others entered and bowed before the Kings.

"Don't you guys think we old farts are boring? What are you doing here?" Black-Moon King smiled.

Du Lishe hastily explained what had occurred to the Kings. She grabbed Moon Wheel King's arm and said, "Father, come take a look and help us understand what Han Sen did."

Really? Let me come and take a look.” Moon Wheel King and the others looked shocked. They followed Du Lishe to the garden.

When they returned to the garden, Du Lishe pointed to the light and said, “This is it! Do you think this is Moon, Father?”

Moon Wheel King had seen the light from all the way across the garden. He sighed and said, “Han Sen’s skills are the best. He examined the leftover power I used to activate the knife, and from it, he was able to learn that much? This is very rare.”

Hearing Moon Wheel King say that shocked Du Lishe and the others. They no longer harbored any doubt.

“Father, how gentle is Han Sen?” Rebecca asked.

“I will say thirty percent. I would be glad if you possessed that level of skill when you reach a Duke. It is acceptable to only achieve it upon reaching King class,” Moon Wheel King said.

Everyone was so shocked, they could not speak.

“It is a shame he has such good talents, but even so, he wasn’t able to become a Viscount without consuming two to three hundred waterdrops. He had to swallow a Red Mist Soul to get this geno art and strength. If Yisha gave him everything, he’d be lucky to reach Duke. There is no way he can reach King at this rate,” Night River King growled.

After hearing that, the young ones felt better. Han Sen’s talent was so scary, it was hard not to be disturbed by it.

Chapter 1933 - Magic

Chapter 1933 Magic

Moon Wheel King was right. Han Sen's Moon only had thirty percent of his own gentle power, and that was because Han Sen's Dongxuan Sutra had only been able to simulate thirty percent.

Han Sen's Dongxuan Sutra was still at a low level, though, so he was still pleased that he had managed to simulate thirty percent. If his Dongxuan Sutra ascended, it would not be difficult to increase that percentage.

"Han Sen, you are good for causing people trouble." Yisha sighed. She had already learned about the incident in which he performed Moon.

Just as Han Sen had believed, Yisha had given him Moon as another test. He had only practiced it for a short time, and he had only seen the Narrow Moon Knife once. The fact that he had still managed such a breakthrough was astounding, and it allayed her fears. She no longer had trouble believing Han Sen, and she was sure he really was just that talented.

It did give Yisha conflicted feelings, though. Anyone would love to have a student that talented, but every time she thought about how hard it was to level up Han Sen, it gave her a headache.

Yisha sighed and spoke to herself, "I need to make a plan to see where he can go in order to level up. I can't wholly rely on my finite supply of resources. It won't take him very far."

Han Sen was back on Planet Eclipse, and while the feeling and memory were still with him, he continued his practice of Moon. That gentle skill was quite useful, and it suited Han Sen well.

When Han Sen had a chance at night, he'd return to the sanctuary to be with his family.

Today, Han Sen went home. Luolan and Han Yufei looked happy. They spoke to Han Sen and said, “A baby’s coming! A baby’s coming!”

Han Sen’s body shivered. His eyes opened wide, staring at his parents. He complimented them, saying, “Dad, you are still very manly. Are you saying I have another little brother or little sister on the way?”

“What are you talking about?” Luolan hit Han Sen across the head. She blushed, and happily said, “It’s Yanran! She’s having a girl.”

“Ah!” Han Sen was so happy, he almost jumped.

“Go and see her.” Han Yufei patted Han Sen on the shoulder.

The family was happy that Ji Yanran was pregnant. It helped to reduce the trauma of Littleflower having been taken, and Ji Yanran particularly felt better because of it.

She had only been pregnant for three months, though. So, it would be a while before the birth.

Han Sen had told people he was off to kill xenogeneics as an excuse. That way, he could spend a lot more time with Ji Yanran at home.

People worked at the base, and he didn’t really need xenogeneic genes. His Viscount gene tally was already maxed out, anyway. Until he became an Earl, there was no point in eating xenogeneic genes.

Han Sen wanted to stay with Ji Yanran until she delivered, but the base soon had news. Yisha was going to the Buddha, and she wanted Han Sen to go with her. Han Sen couldn’t decline, so he packed his stuff and went to Planet Blade. There, he got on a ship alongside Yisha.

“My Queen, why are you going to see the Buddha?” Since Han Sen was here, he wanted this to be over as soon as possible.

Yisha was flying the ship. She didn't look at Han Sen, and she wasn't using her ordinary battleship. She was driving a smaller ship, where only she and Han Sen could occupy it.

"Burning Lamp Alpha gives a speech every century. We are going to listen to him speak, with the Buddha," Yisha said. "Is he the leader of the Buddha?" Han Sen asked.

Yisha nodded and said, "Burning Lamp Alpha is the one that lit the geno lantern. There aren't many of these alphas still alive amongst the higher races."

"Deified elites? We really should listen to his words carefully!" Han Sen said.

Surprisingly, Yisha said, "You don't need to listen to the speech. But you do have to go to the Buddha's heaven." "Heaven?" Han Sen looked at Yisha with confusion.

Yisha smiled and said, "After the alpha has made his speech, he will open up heaven. People are only allowed to go there once in their entire lifetime. I have already been. I am taking you there so you can walk through their heaven. It might help you level up."

"What are the benefits of walking there?" Han Sen asked, blinking.

"It is difficult to say. If you walk well, it might help you greatly. If you walk poorly, you might not gain anything at all. You will find out when you're there, so there's no point in me explaining it to you right now," Yisha said shortly.

Han Sen was curious about the Buddha, particularly because of Ancient Devil. He really wanted to know more about them.

If what Ancient Devil said was true, Asura was somehow connected to the Buddha. And even the Shura of the Alliance and the Demons of the geno universe had some link to the Buddha.

The Buddha were friends of the Rebate, and they weren't too far away from each other. Yisha drove the ship fairly lackadaisically. She wasn't in much of a rush.

“This planet is called Planet Magic. It is one of the planets of the Buddha. The planet is controlled by the Magic. They are an interesting race. It’s good that you will get a look at them.” Yisha parked her ship in the spaceport and took him to disembark with her.

Han Sen wanted to get all this done as soon as he could, so he could get back to spending time with Ji Yanran. But he couldn’t change Yisha’s mind, so he followed her around.

When he stepped off the ship, he saw a creature that was reminiscent of a basketball. It wasn’t exactly like one, but they were circular. They were around the same size as one, and they came in a variety of colors. Their textures were jellylike, and they hopped to move around. They had big eyes, and they looked really cute.

“These jellies are the Magic?” Han Sen asked curiously.

Yisha nodded. “They are a special race. They are not hostile, but their attack power is more surprising than you would think.”

When Han Sen wished to ask why, a pink glob of jelly hopped in front of them. It looked right at Yisha. And then, suddenly, it made a pop noise. The pink jelly took on Yisha’s shape.

Han Sen’s eyes opened wide in shock. Aside from the weaker energy, the pink jelly became Yisha and looked exactly like her.

Yisha did not seem to mind the mimic, and she even stroked the Magic’s head. It enjoyed the touch, and it rubbed her hands.

Han Sen reached out to touch it, too, but Yisha gave him a stern look. It was then that Han Sen realized that if he fondled the Magic, it would practically be the same as him touching Yisha.

It was a shame, but he withdrew his hand.

“Welcome! Our Magic baby was born not too long ago. Are you guys interested in it?” The Magic that looked like Yisha spoke.

“Sh*t! What is this? Are they selling kids? They have a planet protected by the Buddha, so they can’t be doing anything that bad!” Han Sen thought.

Chapter 1934 - Adoption

Chapter 1934 Adoption

The Magic that turned into Yisha knew what Han Sen was thinking, and so it said, “Our lives are weak, and our lifespan is only one hundred Magic Days. That accounts for one cosmic year, in the geno universe. If we get adopted, our lifespan increases to that of our hosts. We live as long as they do. So, upon birth, most of us opt for adoption.”

Han Sen now understood. While it was technically adoption, it was similar to a parasitic relationship. He didn't know if they'd actually benefit the host, and if they did, what benefit they would give.

The Magic anticipated this worry. Seeing Han Sen's facial expression, it proceeded to explain, “An adopted Magic won't affect the life of its host. They only take a small part of the host's energy. And even so, it is down to the host to decide how much we absorb. If you just wanted to keep us alive how we are, a bottle of C4 geno fluid will keep us going for a whole cosmic year. If you want us to evolve, you have to provide more energy than that. And providing and accepting energy is the cornerstone of our relationships; we'd never take anything without permission.”

“A C4 geno fluid is just a meal. It isn't much, at all,” Han Sen said, as he looked at Yisha.

Yisha smiled and said, “The Magic are a peaceful race. If you didn't give want to give them energy, and they were deprived of nutrition, they would die. But even so, they wouldn't try to steal the resources from you. But overall, they are low maintenance and only require a small amount of energy. If you want a high class one, though, then of course they require greater amounts of energy. And they are harder to level up than the average Noble.”

“In that case, why don't I adopt a few?” Han Sen thought the Magic were cute. They were not annoying, and Han Sen didn't want them all to die.

Han Sen could also take a few home to Bao'er to be her companions. And he had plenty of energy to spare.

“Dear Customer, we are sorry. Only one Magic per person is the custom. It's a precaution,” the Magic said.

“Okay, then I'll adopt one,” Han Sen said.

Thank you. Please come this way.” The Magic led the way. Han Sen and Yisha followed it away from the port.

While their port might have looked modem, the other portions of the planet all looked rather primitive. You could see big, grassy fields occupied by globs of jelly that were all hopping around. It was like something out of a fairytale.

On one of the grassy fields, the Magic that looked like Yisha pointed at Han Sen and shouted. “Kids! These customers would like to adopt one of you. Who would like to go with them?”

Quickly, many smaller globs of jelly came hopping over. They were all jumping and bopping around Han Sen, saying, “Pick me! Pick me!”

How do I decide?” Han Sen, seeing this group of Magic, did not know what to do.

“There is not much difference between them. How they grow is down to the host and the energy they receive. You should just pick whichever you like,” Yisha said.

“Pick me! Pick me!” The Magic had their eyes wide open, as they hopped around Han Sen. They earnestly wished to be the one selected.

Han Sen chose a small one. It was a yellow blob of jelly, around the size of a fist. He laid it out in the palm of his hand and said, “I'll choose this one.”

The other Magic looked disappointed and left. They returned to playing around on the fields, waiting for the next chance of adoption.

“Please drip a droplet of blood onto its head. Then you can live with it,” the Magic said.

Han Sen touched a drop of blood onto the yellow jelly ball. He watched as the blood was absorbed, then disappeared entirely. When it was absorbed, Han Sen felt a sudden connection form between him and the Magic. It was like he could read the glob’s mind.

The Magic was very happy, jumping around Han Sen’s hand.

“What is its name?” Han Sen asked.

“They don’t have names. You can provide it a name, if you so choose,” said the Magic that looked like Yisha.

“I will call it Bubble,” Han Sen said. He wasn’t very good at naming things, and he went for whatever rolled off the tongue comfortably.

After he adopted Bubble, Yisha took Han Sen away from Planet Magic. They continued on their way, headed for the biggest xenogeneic space of the Buddha. On the way, Yisha told Han Sen that having a Magic would help him pass through the heaven there. That was why they stopped there on their way.

Han Sen wanted to ask how the Magic would be helpful, but Yisha seemed to be lost in thought and not very talkative.

The Buddha were richer than the Rebate, and they owned many systems. The biggest base they had, however, was Buddha Kingdom.

It was a xenogeneic space that was akin to Narrow Moon, but not many planets were there. There was just a chunk of land in the sky. That land could still be bigger than a system, though. Its size was almost unimaginable.

Han Sen and Yisha didn’t have to announce themselves. They entered the xenogeneic space without being challenged. The Buddha Kingdom was very open, and there were many

different races occupying the city. There weren't even that many of the Buddha there, actually.

Han Sen was surprised to see that many of the Buddha and others had their own Magic. It seemed to be a surprisingly common thing.

Yisha said, "I have to do something before we listen to the speech. You should walk around this Buddha place for a bit, so you might learn a thing or two. I'll catch up with you later."

After that, Yisha was gone. She disappeared, leaving Han Sen alone on the streets.

Han Sen did not know what to do, so he just decided to mosey around. That place was entirely new to him. There were many things there he had never seen before, so it was quite interesting.

On the corner of a city block, there was a man clad in strange garb. He was sitting behind a broken table and holding up a sign that no one there understood. He was smoking, and each puff was done with squinted eyes.

Not long after, an old Buddha walked past the broken table looking sad. For some reason, the sign the man was holding fell onto the Buddha's bald head.

"What is wrong with you?" The old Buddha man rubbed his bald head and stared at the man. He didn't say anything more, and he started to walk away.

"Fellow Buddha, your eyes lack emotion and your forehead is black. You have some black smoke coming out of your head. Something bad must have happened to you recently." The man moved to grab the old man and spoke seriously.

Chapter 1935 - Buddha Wall

Chapter 1935 Buddha Wall

Han Sen was wandering aimlessly on the streets. He looked forward and saw a Buddha woman in the midst of a crowd. She was clad in white robes, and her eyebrows were like those of a painting as she smiled at Han Sen.

“Speechless Buddha Lady?” Han Sen was shocked.

“Mister Han! If you want, I can guide you around the Buddha Kingdom.” Speechless Buddha Lady came before Han Sen and spoke to him.

“Yes, please,” Han Sen said.

It was impossible to escape from the Buddha in Buddha Kingdom. Han Sen had nothing better to do, and she was freely offering to guide him, so he wasn't going to say no. And that aside, Speechless was pretty to look at.

Then please follow me. I won't let you down.” Speechless smiled at Han Sen and then started walking.

Han Sen felt strange. There were many people in the city, but it didn't seem as if anyone recognized Speechless. He wondered why no one gave him peculiar looks.

Speechless knew what Han Sen was thinking, though. She smiled and said, “The Buddha aren't very interested in celebrity. I rarely go out with my rank on display.”

“That's why?” Han Sen nodded, and then asked, “Is there anywhere special I can visit? I'm sure you know the most interesting landmarks around here.”

You can call me Speechless, by the way.” Speechless paused and then said, “I don't think ordinary relics would interest you, but there is a Buddha Wall that resides four hundred

miles from here. It is a place that was visited by a half-deified Buddha King. You should take a look, sir.”

“Call me Han Sen. Being called sir is strange.” Han Sen smiled.

Speechless Buddha Lady nodded and spoke about the origin of the Happy Buddha Wall. She spoke well, and she was pretty to boot. It wasn't a boring listen.

The Happy Buddha Wall was not created by Happy Buddha King. It was a student that drew an image of Happy Buddha King across that wall. That was how it came to be known as Happy Buddha Wall.

Happy Buddha King was a very famous half-deified person, but he left a long time ago. His name was still commonly heard in the city, though, and he was a figure that was most well-known.

The student that drew his image was not any ordinary person, either. He was a legendary fellow.

Out of the higher races, the Buddha society included the most outsiders. In the Buddha Kingdom, only one percent of its people were full-blooded Buddha. The rest were outsiders, and many of them were quite famous.

Some of the famous outsiders were even Kings.

The person that drew Happy Buddha King was an outsider Duke named Silla. That person admired Happy Buddha King a great deal, so they wished to draw him a portrait.

There were many different stories. Silla met with Happy Buddha King ten times with the offer, and each time Silla was rejected. The eleventh time, however, Happy Buddha King allowed Silla to proceed. The Happy Buddha Wall was the result.

Before finishing the drawing, Silla practiced for three years straight in complete isolation. When Silla returned, Silla did so as a King. Silla eventually went on to become half-deified, as well.

There was a saying amongst the Buddha: Silla King was a famous King, but just like Happy Buddha King, history forgot them. All people now knew was the remnant of the Happy Buddha Wall.

Han Sen liked the story, and when it came to a close, they were on Sky Cliff. That was where the wall was.

Han Sen thought that the place, due to its sacred importance, would be well-protected. But there was not even a railing, and they were able to come right before the wall.

The Happy Buddha Wall was drawn on the cliffside. It was at least ten meters high. It looked rather strange.

Han Sen looked at the Happy Buddha Wall from far away. He wondered, "I thought this was an image of Happy Buddha King. Why are there two Buddha's painted on the wall? Which one is he?"

The wall portrayed a Buddha sitting upon a lotus flower, smiling. But there was also a Buddha lady next to the Buddha. She was holding his neck, and they were locked in a kiss.

Speechless smiled and said, "I thought there were a lot of gods in the beliefs of the Rebate. Happy Buddha King is our lover god. Happy Buddha King is called Ming King, and the Buddha lady there is Ming's wife. They were both deified, and forever together. They were both called Happy Buddha King."

"I see." Han Sen may have said that, but inside, he thought, "Isn't this like a combination of two? I thought it was just one King, but it was in fact a horny old man and his woman."

"Nothing is sense, and sense is not nothing. Nothing is not sense. Where the senses are, is where the Buddha are." Speechless spoke to Han Sen seriously.

“I don’t understand this. It seems as if I am not suitable enough for the Buddha.” Han Sen smiled.

Speechless smiled and said, “I cannot tell you if this is suitable for you, but perhaps by looking at the wall, you may learn a thing or two. When Silla drew this picture, Silla King learned of what it meant to be happy. The happiness is inside this very wall. If this is your fate, then you will learn something, also.”

Han Sen examined the Happy Buddha Wall, but could not learn anything. He gave a wry smile and said, “It seems as if I am not suitable for the Buddha, as I am unable to glean anything.”

“I have a way for you to see it, but I will have to help you. Are you willing to try this?” Speechless’ beautiful eyes peered right through Han Sen.

“If you are willing to help, then of course.” Han Sen smiled.

“Okay, then look into my eyes. Tell me what it is that you see.” Speechless smiled at Han Sen, as her eyes began to show some form of movement.

Han Sen looked at her eyes, but her eyes were too pretty. It was difficult to describe how beautiful they were. They were crystal-clear, and looking at them made people want to stare in awe.

Han Sen felt like his vision was becoming sucked into her own. Within the reflection of her eyes, he clearly saw himself. But the shadow was so strange, and he saw himself naked. He wore nothing in front of Speechless Buddha Lady.

Boom!

Han Sen felt as if he had just been shot in the head. So many thoughts rushed to his mind all at once, many of which made him blush.

Speechless' eyes continued looking at Han Sen. They became watery, and she looked at Han Sen strangely.

Chapter 1936 - Antiphasic

Chapter 1936 Antiphasic

“Ming’s wife used her love to feed that cruel demon Ming King. She seduced him to open his mind and become a Buddha King herself. Even that cruel monster could not block it, so how could you?” Speechless felt so very cocky.

During the cultural exchange between the Buddha and the Rebate, Speechless had been beaten by Gu Qingcheng. She was not happy about that. When Speechless heard that Han Sen was visiting the Buddha Kingdom, she went looking for him. She badly wanted to exact her revenge badly.

She planned to bring Han Sen to the Happy Buddha Wall. With the atmosphere in front of the wall being what it was, and with her skills to disturb Han Sen’s will, she knew she would succeed.

Speechless would not stand for Han Sen becoming one of the Buddha. So, she made him fall in love with her. She was confident with the seed of love she planted.

With Han Sen’s mind currently shaken, she could take advantage of his dazed state and plant her seed. He would do whatever she bid him to do, and he would listen to her no matter what.

The skill was called Desire, and there were few people who could practice it with proficiency. Speechless was very talented with it, though, because of her connection to Speechless Buddha King. Speechless Buddha King had practiced happy skills, and she followed his example.

Speechless’ eyes looked very attractive, and she thought to herself, “Come on. While your will is still a mess, I will nudge you into a situation that will embarrass you horribly when you come to your senses.”

Thinking about this made her feel so much better. She casually began to check out Han Sen.

He actually looked a lot like a Buddha. Han Sen's face was more attractive than average, but it was too thick to look exactly like a Buddha's, though. It wasn't pretty.

But Han Sen's talents were shockingly good. They were so defined. Even she was jealous of what he was capable of.

What shocked her the most was Han Sen's eyes. They weren't pretty, but they were extremely attractive, for a reason she could not pinpoint. Something about them reminded her of a rising phoenix. Those black eyes were an enthralling abyss, and as she stared into them, Speechless suddenly found it difficult to look away.

Slowly, Speechless' face started to blush. Her own eyes quivered strangely. She came closer and closer to him. Her eyes were so attractive, and her lips drew near Han Sen's.

"Why do I think he looks different, all of a sudden?" Speechless wondered, and her heart was beginning to race. She suddenly needed Han Sen like she needed to breathe. He looked like the person of her dreams.

Speechless' lifeforce was all messed up. A moan passed her lips, as her eyes dropped into a soft look. It seemed as if she wanted to pull Han Sen closer.

Her arms, beneath the white robe, wrapped around Han Sen's neck. Her lips were going to connect with Han Sen's lips.

Suddenly, a finger landed on Speechless' lips. She was hastily thrust out of her daze.

"Don't try that too much; you'll become addicted." Han Sen smiled as he touched Speechless* lips.

Speechless' cheeks burst into fire. With another moan, she stumbled backwards. Her heart was all tangled up, and she couldn't bring herself to even look at Han Sen now. She wanted to dig a hole and hide herself.

"I'm sorry; I have remembered that there is in fact something I ought to do. I will take my leave now. Sorry." Speechless was in complete shock, and it was obvious she wanted to run away.

Han Sen found it funny that Speechless, of all people, would run off in such a manner.

His will was like that of a deified being. It was too strong for someone like Speechless to easily manipulate. Speechless' Desire skill could not shake Han Sen. Her attempt at seduction had backfired, and that was why she ran off.

After she left, Han Sen sat down on some stairs and observed the Happy Buddha Wall.

Han Sen couldn't discern anything particularly special about it. But now that she was gone, he could scan the wall with his Dongxuan Aura.

"I see." Han Sen looked at it, then deactivated his Dongxuan Aura. It turned out that it wasn't worth checking out.

Just as he was getting ready to leave, though, a few people arrived. They had come there to see the wall, too.

Han Sen looked at them and noticed how similar to humans they looked—aside from the horns on their heads, of course. Furthermore, Han Sen knew the leader of the bunch.

"Luo Ji? He's not dead?" Han Sen was surprised.

When he met Luo Ji the Demon, he was on Planet Kate. Luo Ji had invited Han Sen to join him at Demon's Grave. When danger befell the pair, Luo Ji abandoned Han Sen and fled into the desert.

Han Sen hadn't seen the man since, and so he presumed him to be dead.

Apparently the man had survived, and to top it off, he had come to the Buddha Kingdom at the same time as Han Sen.

It looked as if he had practiced a lot in the time they had been apart. He was faster than Han Sen, and that was because he was an Earl.

When Luo Ji saw Han Sen, he too looked surprised. He asked Han Sen, “You are Knife Queen’s student, Han Sen?”

“Yes I am. Who are you?” Han Sen had used his Dollar persona when he first met Luo Ji. The man didn’t know Han Sen was Dollar.

“I am Luo Ji of Demon.” Luo Ji had brought a few Demons with him. He smiled at Han Sen, “You must be here to access the Buddha heaven, correct? How about we go there together?”

“I have other business I must conduct. I am sorry to disappoint you,” Han Sen said and left.

Han Sen knew what sort of person Luo Ji was now, and he knew he wouldn’t cooperate fully with him.

“Disrespectful!” After Han Sen left, a Demon behind Luo Ji spoke.

Luo Ji waved his hand and said, “That man’s genes may not be stable, but his skill is profound. Knife Queen took him as a student, so it is best we do not offend him. This trip to heaven is important to me. We cannot risk failure. Please behave and do not cause me unnecessary trouble.”

Yes, sir.” The Demons with him agreed.

Han Sen was walking west, but he didn’t have time to stop and admire the views. He just wanted to return to the city where Burning Lamp Alpha was to deliver a speech. And after that, he wanted to get this heaven ordeal over with so he could return to his wife.

Han Sen spent two days returning to the Buddha city. As soon as he entered, he saw a familiar shadow appear in the crowd.

“Why is he here?” Han Sen stared in shock. But then, the shadow disappeared.

Han Sen walked to the alley where he had seen it, but he found no trace of the man.

“Are my eyes going funny? God’s Retribution cannot be here. There is no way he could come out here without my assistance.” Han Sen retreated into thought, as the entire situation seemed wrong. But the shape of the shadow’s body really did look like him.

Chapter 1937 - Buddha's Path

Chapter 1937 Buddha's Path

Han Sen walked around a bit, but he didn't catch sight of God's Retribution again.

"Maybe my eyes are going funny." Han Sen shook his head, then went to find a place in the Buddha city to stay.

The city was made of gold, and even the ground was paved with it. It was rather intimidating in its splendor. There were statues of the Buddha everywhere, and their presence made Han Sen feel uncomfortable.

"I wonder when Yisha will show up again?" Han Sen waited for another two days, and still didn't see her. He was getting impatient now.

People in the city were starting to talk about Burning Lamp Alpha's upcoming speech quite a bit now. No race was prohibited from hearing the speech, and anyone of any status could go.

"It is no wonder she said it does not matter if I hear it or not. Since the speech will address everyone, surely nothing unique or valuable will be said. Everyone will know whatever he says," Han Sen was thinking as he approached a Buddha statue.

He was walking on a famous Buddha Path. It was a straight road that led straight to the Burning Lamp Alpha's palace. The way was ten meters wide, adorned with three thousand gold Buddhas fencing it.

The rumors said that every Buddha represented a world. Three thousand Buddhas meant there were three thousand worlds. There was a genre of the Buddha that was called Three Thousand Worlds. It was derived from the three thousand Buddhas of that path.

Han Sen didn't believe the stories, though. But he had nothing better to do with his time, and so he decided to come and take a look. Perhaps he'd be able to learn a thing or two.

Because Burning Lamp Alpha would give a speech, many outsiders were there, just like Han Sen. They were all accompanied by Magic of their own.

Bubble began bouncing up and down, wild with excitement.

The intelligence of the Magic grew slowly, and their personalities were rather simple. They weren't complex beings. Reaching the level of intelligence of the one that mimicked the shape of Yisha would take a few decades. It also took a lot of energy for that to happen.

The three thousand Buddha statues were all unique, and not one of them was a copy of another. Han Sen came to take a look to kill some time.

When he walked past two hundred Buddhas, he saw Speechless and a few of the other outsiders there. None of them appeared to be low-ranked. Speechless had probably guided them there so they could take a look at the Buddhas.

Han Sen took a closer look and was surprised. All those outsiders were of a different race. One of them was a Feather.

The Feathers had been removed from the hall of higher races, and they were hardly ever seen outside of Holy Heaven nowadays. It was nothing small to see a Feather here.

Han Sen did not recognize that Feather, though. But amongst them was one person that Han Sen knew. And that was Hai'er of Pirate. She, too, was in the Buddha city.

"It looks like everyone is taking this heaven business seriously. I wonder what's so good about it, and what resides in their heaven? I don't know what Yisha was thinking when she decided not to explain anything. Am I not her student?

Or did she just get kicked in the head by a donkey?" Han Sen felt depressed.

Luckily, Hai'er would only recognize Han Sen if he was wearing his Dongxuan armor. That would be the face of Dollar. If she knew who he was, she might very well have tried to attack him then and there.

Aside from Han Sen, there was also a man with a cow's head. He looked like a minotaur. He was not of the Kao, but Han Sen thought he was the same race as the fellow he had encountered during various Rebate events.

There were three others there, too. One of them had a head that grew like a dragonfly. There was one with three faces and six arms, and the other was a Gana man. He had the snake lower body and all.

They were all unique. Han Sen could not tell how strong they all were, but they all looked very different.

Han Sen stopped looking at them and returned his gaze to the statues around him. Han Sen really didn't want to see Hai'er, in case she somehow identified him.

"Buddha Lady, on this trip to heaven, how many people can reach the other side?" The Gana man addressed Speechless.

"There are many geniuses here, so many should be able to reach the other side. You are each an elite of your respective races, with unique talents. If you have a strong will, you will make it," Speechless said.

The cowhead man grunted and said, "Maybe not. This heaven has opened many times, and fewer than ten finish it each time. I am sure there is some limit to the number of those who can make it. And the more elites there are, the harder it will be."

"Amitabha!" Speechless spoke the Buddha catchphrase, and then she said, "Sig Earl, you think too much. There are no enforced limitations. If you can walk through heaven, you will."

The Gana man emotionlessly looked at the cowhead man and said, “Sig, if you are so afraid, you do not have to go.” “Goode, what are you saying?” The cowhead man ran towards the Gana in rage, breathing fire out of his nose.

“Calm down. This is the Buddha’s Path; you cannot make so much noise here.” Speechless stepped between the two.

Hai’er and the guy with three faces and six arms did not speak. They were merely watching.

Sig and Goode did not look as if they would continue the feud, and they simply ignored each other after that.

Speechless kept guiding them forward, showing off the three thousand Buddhas. When they came near Han Sen, Han Sen turned away from them. He didn’t want to get involved.

She only saw his back, but Speechless recognized Han Sen. Her expression became strange, and she pretended she hadn’t noticed him. She continued her tour of the three thousand Buddhas.

Seeing them walk away, Han Sen felt much relief. But before he could completely relax, Hai’er walked back towards Han Sen.

Han Sen was shocked. “Did she see something?”

Han Sen was not afraid of her, but he couldn’t risk his identity of Dollar being exposed. It’d cause big trouble with Yisha.

Hai’er walked right up to Han Sen and looked him over. Han Sen kept looking at the Buddha and ignored her.

Han Sen decided that, if she did notice something, he’d deny whatever she said. He’d deny no matter what.

Hai'er put her hand on Han Sen's shoulder and spoke quietly into his ear. She said, "Are you romantically involved with Speechless?"

Han Sen was shocked. He certainly hadn't expected Hai'er to say that. So, he just looked at her and pretended he didn't know what she meant.

Chapter 1938 - Virtual Table

Chapter 1938 Virtual Table

Seeing how shocked Han Sen looked, Hai'er took his reaction for a confirmation. She then murmured, "We shouldn't talk here. We should find someplace else to chat."

"I think you have the wrong guy; I have no clue about what you're talking about." Han Sen acted through his shock.

Hai'er lifted her lips in a little smile and said, "There is no use in pretending. I am a thief, and nothing escapes my senses. I will tell this to a Buddha King; you know what will happen to you and Speechless if I do, right?"

Before Han Sen could put another word in, Hai'er continued. "Oh, but just so you know, I am not being hostile. Actually, I would like to strike a trade with you."

After saying that, Hai'er pulled Han Sen away from Buddha's Path. They walked out of the city and went to the banks of a nearby river.

Han Sen wished to hear what she wanted to say, so he didn't resist following her out.

"Okay, let's talk here." Hai'er let Han Sen go, then sat down atop a rock. She smiled and said, "Given your relationship with Speechless Buddha Lady, I can only assume you know the secrets to heaven."

"What secrets?" Han Sen asked Hai'er.

"Stop pretending! Heaven has opened many times, and many races have been here. Only ten of them can reach the end, each and every time. I believe there is a secret to this somewhere." Hai'er was peering right at Han Sen when she continued. "With Speechless' reputation, she must assuredly know how to reach the other side. I don't want anything

from you. All I want is for you to take me with you and help me reach the end. If you do, I'll keep the relationship between you two a secret. I promise."

"I think you have misunderstood us. I know Speechless, but we are not in a relationship with each other. In fact, we have only ever met twice," Han Sen said.

Hai'er looked annoyed by the denial. Her face filled up with frost and she said, "This is bad. I am going to tell Buddha King about it right now."

"So what if he knows?" Han Sen laughed at Hai'er.

Hai'er looked back at Han Sen with disdain. "Still pretending? You can't hide anything from a Pirate. ^ every trick in the book to get others to join their creed. Marriage is one such method. Many creatures in this universe have been tethered to the Buddha in this way. Like Happy Buddha King; he was the best in the entire universe. Yet even he was suckered into one of those arrangements. Speechless is famous, and she will have a marriage with someone powerful. It's a must for her. If Buddha King learns about you two, do you think he will let you go lightly? You should know about this."

Han Sen didn't know the Buddha had such a culture, and he found it rather interesting.

When Han Sen didn't respond, Hai'er went on to say, "Others don't know the Buddha are this way, but we do. They are not much smarter than the Pirate, you know. I don't really like them, and more than that, I don't want to expose your story. If you help me, it is a win-win situation for all of us."

"You know who I am?" Han Sen asked Hai'er.

Hai'er was surprised and said, "How am I supposed to know who you are? You're just a lowly Viscount Even if you are famous, the Buddha won't let you be with her."

Han Sen smiled and said, "I am the student of the Rebate called Knife Queen. This is my first time here, and it marks my third encounter with Speechless. Nothing else is going on, okay? You are wholeheartedly mistaken."

Hai'er frowned at Han Sen. She looked right at him. Seeing him turn to leave, she tugged at him and said, "Even if the two of you aren't together, how about we co-operate anyway? Let's walk through heaven together!"

"What benefit is there for us to co-operate?" Han Sen asked Hai'er.

"There is a lot. I am the number one genius of the Pirate. Everyone knows the name Hai'er. She is a rare and very talented person. I will be deified, one day." Hai'er kept complimenting herself, showing utterly no embarrassment.

"If you and I co-operate, it would be easier to traverse heaven." Hai'er patted Han Sen on his shoulder.

"If you're as good as you say, why do you need Speechless to guide you?" Han Sen laughed at her.

Hai'er's face did not change, and she said, "I am certain I can get through it, but this is a once-in-a-lifetime affair. It's good to take extra precautionary measures, don't you think?"

Han Sen turned around and left, ignoring her.

Hai'er followed and pleaded, "Let's talk about it! State your conditions."

"I don't know anything about what to expect in heaven, so following me is pointless." Han Sen knew Hai'er was suspicious about the prospect of his relationship with Speechless, so he kept walking resolutely.

Hai'er gritted her teeth and pulled out something. "You must know this. If you co-operate with me, then this is yours."

Han Sen looked at Hai'er's hands and saw a tablet. It was palm-sized. There were many words, smaller than grains of rice, etched into it. There was nothing particularly special about it, though.

"What is it?" Han Sen looked at Hai'er's tablet dubiously.

Hai'er looked shocked. She stared at Han Sen, and said, "Really? You don't know about the Virtual Tablet?"

"What is a Virtual Tablet?" Han Sen looked at it and asked.

Hai'er saw that Han Sen was honestly confused, so she shook it in front of him and said, "The Virtual Tablet is a powerful treasure left behind by a mysterious, higher race. It has that mysterious race's geno art. When the Buddha received the Virtual Tablet, they absorbed the talents to become as they are. Many geno arts have come from this Virtual Tablet. This is one of many. The Pirate unearthed it from some old ruins, and no one else knows about this. But it can be yours for the price of a co-operative partnership."

"How do I know if this is real or not?" Han Sen was curious.

"Aren't you Knife Queen's student? If you let her take a look, she'll know the truth. She won't lie, either," Hai'er said.

"Okay. If this is real, I will cross heaven with you." Han Sen took the tablet. Hai'er had no relationship with Speechless, and she was practically giving him something for free. He wasn't going to reject that.

Chapter 1939 - Heaven

Chapter 1939 Heaven

“Why are you following me?” Han Sen asked, looking at Hai’er.

Hai’er sauntered casually behind him. “I gave you my end of the bargain, so of course I’m going to follow you. Heaven is going to open in a few days, and until then, I am attaching myself to you.”

“I am going to listen to Burning Lamp Alpha’s speech. We can meet there,” Han Sen said.

“There’s nowhere else for me to go, anyway. I might as well follow you. It might be nice to meet up with Knife Queen, too.” Hai’er really wanted to follow him.

Han Sen, seeing that Hai’er wasn’t leaving, allowed her to tag along.

There were a few days to go until the speech was to commence, and it felt like forever for Han Sen. On the day of the speech, Yisha still hadn’t revealed herself.

“Weird. Where is Yisha? Did she go to the speech area straight away?” Han Sen frowned.

“Are you really Knife Queen’s student? Where is she?” When the speech was about to begin, Hai’er cast a suspicious glance at Han Sen. She was starting to think she didn’t know who he really was.

“If you don’t believe me, then take your tablet back. Then we can go our separate ways.” Han Sen held it out to her.

Over the past few days, he had researched the text on the tablet. It looked like something very profound, but there was no beginning or end to the text it included. It was just a section of a greater geno art. You couldn’t learn anything from that.

Han Sen found out the tablet was rather well-known, though. The section that Hai'er had was likely very real.

The Virtual Tablet had quite a lot of storage, and the geno art filled all of it. If he only had one piece, then he only had one part of the geno art. It was no wonder why Hai'er was willing to give it to him.

“No! You've already read the contents. What's the point of giving it back to me now?” Hai'er shook her head.

Han Sen ignored her, and he continued to frown.

The speech started, and Yisha had yet to return. Without Yisha, Han Sen wouldn't have the Buddha's invitation to enter their Heaven. He could not listen to the speech in the palace, so he'd have to stay in the plaza and listen alongside the commoners.

Burning Lamp Alpha couldn't be seen from the plaza. The audience could only listen to his voice ringing out of yellow speakers.

Many creatures listened to the speech through the Buddha sound system. When Han Sen heard what was being spoken, he thought it was very meaningful. He felt as if his heart had leveled up.

But after thinking about it a little more, he thought it was indeed a little too vague. If you could do what the speech told you to do, you would have to be a saint. You wouldn't have to learn anything.

“It's your fault! I am from the Pirate! I am supposed to listen from the palace. Now I'm stuck in the plaza with these lowlifes and you!” Hai'er sounded upset.

Han Sen laughed and said, “You probably weren't going to listen all that well, anyway. It doesn't matter where you were standing when you heard him speak.”

“It’s different. Hearing it from the palace is a recognition of your identity. It’s different when you’re there,” Hai’er said. Han Sen didn’t think too much on the speech, though. He was concerned for Yisha, who was still a no-show.

Far away, in a stone pavilion in the southwest corner of Buddha Kingdom, an old man was sitting in front of a table. It looked as if he was dozing off.

There was a game of chess sitting on the table, and it was in the midst of a stalemate.

Yisha was sitting opposite the man, examining the stalemate in play atop the table. She was holding a piece, trying to decide on her next move.

The pavilion was fairly ordinary, but it gave others a feeling of separation from the world outside. It was like a realm that did not exist in full.

Time passed, and Yisha sat as still as if she had been turned to stone.

Han Sen couldn’t see Burning Lamp Alpha, and the speech lasted the entire day. After that, the creatures all showed their thanks to the Alpha, kowtowing before the palace.

The speech ended, and the heavens opened. Countless creatures poured in towards the opening.

Han Sen and Hai’er were stuck in the crowd, looking at the way to Heaven.

There were eight doors in the Buddha city, and three of them were open. Five of them were always shut. One of the doors led to Heaven, and that was the only way to Heaven. It was situated in the west.

The western door was now open, and when they looked out at it, they could see a Buddha light. It obviously did not lead to the land outside the city, as one might expect.

Han Sen still hadn’t seen Yisha, so he decided to move with the crowd towards the western door. When he went through the western door, he was not taken outside the city. He found himself in a desert.

Nothing was visible on those desert wastes; not even cacti. It was just yellow sand, sizzling beneath a bright, hot sky.

After entering the desert, Han Sen heard something, like someone whispering near him. It almost sounded like someone speaking the Buddha catchphrase, but from an indiscernible source.

The noise flowed all around him in a constant susurrus. The sound wasn't loud, but he could hear it clearly. It was like it was coming straight from his brain.

As he listened to that sound, Han Sen's body wanted to move along with it. It made him frown.

"Do you hear a noise?" Han Sen asked Hai'er.

"Of course. Did you not know that Heaven has the heavenly sounds?" Hai'er rolled her eyes. If she hadn't asked around, she wouldn't have believed Han Sen was the student of Knife Queen. He didn't know anything.

"What's up with these heavenly sounds?" Han Sen was trying to pinpoint its source, but he couldn't figure it out.

Hai'er kept walking and explained, "The music is everywhere, all across this Heaven. At first, it will feel like it's nothing. But the longer you hear it for, the deeper it will touch you. If you can't stay composed and walk through this Heaven in time, your body will begin to dance along with it. It won't stop until you're dead."

Han Sen frowned and said, "If it's that dangerous, and only ten people can make it through, why are so many people coming here? Aren't they afraid of dying?"

"Well, you can turn back before you lose control. You'll be safe if you do that." Hai'er looked around, but she could not catch sight of Speechless. Then, she asked, "When will you and Speechless meet up?"

“I told you! We are not in a relationship.” Han Sen looked around and asked, “How do I know when to keep going or when I should return?”

“It depends on who you are. Everyone has fear in their hearts. You turn back when you’ve lost all hope. The more confident and stubborn people are, the more danger they are in.” Hai’er rolled her eyes, and continued on to say, “But you will be fine. Speechless will protect you, and you will make it to the end.”

Chapter 1940 - Seven Spirit Buddha

Chapter 1940 Seven Spirit Buddha

Han Sen didn't bother to contradict her again. He followed the big group across the desert.

There was a huge crowd around them initially, but many people quickly began to tire and turn back.

There was no day and night cycle in Heaven, and the sun was always high in the sky. After ten hours, the sun was still unmoved.

It was just as Hai'er said, too. The heavenly voice was nearly impossible to ignore. It wasn't long until Han Sen saw weaker-willed creatures beginning to dance along with the music. A giant danced across the sand. An initial glance might seem amusing, but it ultimately gave onlookers the chills.

Many groups of people walked together. If anyone started dancing with the music, others could snap them out of it. Some creatures that were having difficulty withstanding the music, and they decided to turn back. They didn't want to risk dying there.

The music did not affect Han Sen at all, though. He heard it, but it was just annoying, more than anything. Hai'er kept on bugging Han Sen about when he was going to meet up with Speechless, but he was too lazy to answer her.

Hai'er refused to give it up, though. He eventually couldn't stand it. He frowned and asked, "Why do you think I'm in a relationship with her?"

Hai'er smiled and said, "I am a woman, too. The way she looked at you could not fool me. Can you swear to God that there's nothing between you two?"

Han Sen shrugged and did not say another word. He continued walking.

There was no nighttime in that desert. No one knew the specific direction they should be moving, which eventually resulted in the large crowds splitting up as people ventured separate ways. Most of them continued going forward, though. And that meant they were headed west.

Han Sen was going west, as well. But as time went by, there were fewer and fewer people around him. The desert was too large.

After fifty hours of this, aside from Hai'er, there was no one nearby.

Hai'er kept walking and asked, "Han Sen, I can't see anyone close to us. Speechless should be here!"

Han Sen acted like he didn't hear anything. He merely stroked Bubble, which was perched on his shoulder, and asked, "Did you bring a Magic? What do they do?"

Hai'er said, "They aren't affected by the music. You can use them for a distraction from the music. It keeps your mind from being so easily lured by the heavenly music."

"I see." Han Sen had guessed that, but he just wanted confirmation.

"Stop beating around the bush: when is Speechless getting here?" Hai'er asked in irritation.

As Han Sen started to respond, a shadow appeared over the horizon. They looked in its direction and saw a Buddha with a white robe. The bald head gleamed under the radiance of the sun.

"You see? There is no way I could have been mistaken." Hai'er looked cocky.

"Look closer; it's a man. It's not Speechless," Han Sen said after a second.

"You're still pretending? Speechless must have sent that man to pick you up. You cannot lie to me." Hai'er gave him a you cannot lie to me face.

Han Sen's face suddenly looked rather pale, and his eyes twitched. He had picked up a very hostile aura coming from that man.

"Let's go." Han Sen turned around and started to leave.

"Stop playing," Hai'er said with an eye-roll, but then she realized that Han Sen was already running off.

Hai'er turned to look at the Buddha and found that he had accelerated. He was coming towards her like an arrow. She felt something was amiss now, too, and so she ran after Han Sen.

"Who is that? Isn't he here to pick you up?" Hai'er asked as she ran.

"I already told you; I have nothing to do with Speechless," Han Sen said again.

Hai'er turned her head to look behind them, and she saw the Buddha getting closer. She was shocked, and said, "If you have nothing to do with her, why are they chasing you? They must have unearthed your dirty secret, and that's why that man has been dispatched to get rid of you!"

Hai'er looked at the man more closely, then screamed. "Seven Spirit Buddha! I was right. You and Speechless have been exposed. This Buddha has been sent to kill you."

'You recognize him?" Han Sen asked.

He didn't know why one of the Buddha would come after him. And since their pursuer was undoubtedly a hostile, Han Sen wanted to know more about him.

"You haven't heard of Seven Spirit Buddha? He is Speechless Buddha King's seventh son, but the Buddha King did not leave anything to him in his will. He gave everything to Speechless. Seven Spirit Buddha wasn't denied an inheritance because he was a disappointment, but because he was too smart. Speechless Buddha King was afraid that his will might limit and actually impede Seven Spirit's future. So, nothing was left for him.

Burning Lamp Alpha himself refused to take students for a thousand years, but decades ago, he made an exception for Seven Spirit Buddha. He must be a Marquise by now.”

Hai’er went on to say, “The relationship between you and Speechless must have been exposed. That is why he is here to kill you. So, since this has nothing to do with me, I’ll take my leave.”

After that, Hai’er changed course and ran the other way. She wanted to get as far away from Han Sen as she could to avoid getting mixed up in his mess.

Han Sen suddenly sped up, though, and he grabbed Hai’er by the clothes. He picked her up and continued running.

“What are you doing? I thought we were friends! Don’t harm me!” Hai’er struggled, trying to escape.

“I am Knife Queen’s student. The Rebate and the Buddha have a good relationship. If they wanted to kill me, do you think they would allow witnesses to know that I was murdered?” Han Sen coldly said.

Hai’er was shocked, and so she stopped resisting. She said, “We should run separate ways, then. He might not come after me. It’s better than dying with you, at least.”

“You’re just a Viscount. If I was the Seven Spirit Buddha, I’d kill you before coming after me,” Han Sen said.

“You say that like you’re really strong, but you’re a Viscount the same as me.” Hai’er smiled.

But after she said that, she felt Han Sen tucking her under his armpit. Then he accelerated to a point where she could not even open her eyes for the wind.

“How is he so fast?” Hai’er was shocked.

Chapter 1941 - Battle Buddha

Chapter 1941 Battle Buddha

Han Sen carried Hai'er as he ran, but it wasn't because he had any sympathy for her. He wanted a witness. If he had one, it might prove useful further down the line.

Han Sen used his rabbit shoes to run, but he still looked gloomy. Seven Spirit Buddha was keeping up with him, and the gap between them was slowly closing.

Although there was still some distance between them, Han Sen was fleeing over the flat, unobstructed sands. There was no place to hide, and it would only be a matter of time before Seven Spirit Buddha caught up with him.

"He's just a Marquise?" Han Sen looked back. Seven Spirit Buddha was one kilometer behind them.

Hai'er was shocked, and she said, "Seven Spirit Buddha is a Marquise, but he is a genius amongst the Buddha. And Burning Lamp Alpha taught him personally. I fear not even a Duke could rival him. You need to run, because he is coming."

Han Sen wanted to run faster, but he was still just a Viscount. He was already moving as fast as the shoes would allow. "Seven Spirit Buddha! Why are you chasing me?" Han Sen shouted as he ran.

Seven Spirit Buddha said grimly, "Amitabha!"

He didn't say anything more. He merely focused on his pursuit of Han Sen, and he slowly reeled in the distance between them.

Hai'er looked grim, and she said, "It looks like he really wants to kill you. This is bad, man. If we don't reach our destination, we're going to die."

Han Sen suddenly slapped Hai'er's body, sending a surge of energy into her. She found herself unable to move. She couldn't squirm, and neither could she speak.

"Stop talking. I can lose him," Han Sen said to Hai'er as he hopped up a sand dune.

But Han Sen didn't jump up there to remain on high ground. He slid down its other side, and he used the height of the dune to obscure Seven Spirit Buddha's vision.

The moment Han Sen was out of sight, he patted Little Invisible. Then, a strange colorful power wrapped him up. Han Sen was able to blend into the desert itself. No eyesight could detect them.

After crossing another thousand meters, Seven Spirit Buddha reached the dune. Then, he started looking around.

"Mister Han, I know you are here. Come and fight me, student of Knife Queen. At least die with dignity," Seven Spirit Buddha rumbled.

Nothing responded to him, though. Seven Spirit Buddha did not move from his position as he looked over the desert. He moved his lips, and a sound came out of his mouth.

A whirlwind kicked up, quickly swirling into a choking sandstorm. It had a diameter of a thousand meters, and its thickness painted it like a yellow fog. Seven Spirit Buddha was convinced Han Sen was there, and he wished to use the sandstorm to reveal him. But when the sandstorm quelled, he was unable to see anything. It was still and quiet, and he could not see Han Sen.

"Is he good with the element of earth?" Seven Spirit Buddha spoke to himself. He looked around and ventured in a specific direction. Then, he disappeared.

In the sky, Hai'er saw Seven Spirit Buddha vanish. She wanted Han Sen to free her, but she had no voice to speak with. She was yelling in her mind, "*sshole! Let me go! You are deliberately touching me."

She could only think these things, since she still couldn't control her mouth.

Han Sen was in the air, and he didn't go back down. Neither did he free Hai'er. He slowly flew higher and higher. He drifted up so gradually, it felt as if he wasn't moving at all.

"Wimp! Seven Spirit Buddha is gone. Why are you still being so careful? Let me go!" Hai'er was yelling in her heart.

Han Sen's forehead dripped with sweat. He was just a Viscount, and flying slowly cost more energy than flying fast. And on top of that, he was holding Hai'er. That cost him even more energy. After ten minutes, he traveled one kilometer.

Hai'er was going to go crazy, being unable to move or speak. If she could, she'd have been yelling at Han Sen.

Suddenly, Hai'er saw the same dune that Seven Spirit Buddha had been standing atop. Seven Spirit Buddha had appeared there once again.

He was wearing a white robe, standing atop the dune. It was as if he hadn't moved at all.

Hai'er was shocked, and she thought to herself, "I saw him walk away. Why is he still here? Can he teleport?"

Amidst Hai'er's shock, Seven Spirit Buddha mumbled something to himself. A light then came out of his body, glowing strangely from his chest. It looked like another seven spirits emerged from him and walked their own separate ways.

Not long after, another seven spirits emerged from each of the seven spirits. They all went off in different directions, but the real Seven Spirit Buddha was still atop the original dune. After a while, he traveled west.

"Buddha Clone? He is powerful." Hai'er understood that the seven spirits she was seeing were actually just clones.

But producing clones like that was something only a King class Buddha could do. Seven Spirit Buddha was just a Marquise. His ability to produce seven clones to search for them was terrifying.

Hai'er was so happy right now that Han Sen had not freed her. If she had made a noise, Seven Spirit Buddha would immediately have known where they were.

"This guy is pretty good. He's just a Viscount, but he has that speed? I don't know what treasure he collected to make him so fast," Hai'er thought.

Han Sen landed, and then he removed their camouflage. He also freed her.

Hai'er was being quite suspicious. She carefully looked around and said, "Is he really gone?"

"He is for now, but I am sure he will be back." Han Sen moved to rest on the sand.

Then what are we waiting for? Let's run!" Hai'er said.

Han Sen did not move from his spot, though, and he calmly said, "His clones went off in eight different directions. Wherever we go, he will see us."

"Then what do we do?" Hai'er was not strong enough to deal with someone like Seven Spirit Buddha. Somehow, she had found herself depending on Han Sen.

Chapter 1942 - Nowhere to Hide

Chapter 1942 Nowhere to Hide

“We need to find a way to exit this Heaven. We might have escaped for now, but there’s still a chance we might be found by Seven Spirit,” Han Sen said.

“If you do not know how to get out of here, then you should know that I don’t, either,” Hai’er said. She thought for a moment. “Can’t you turn invisible? If we stay invisible, then Seven Spirit’s clones won’t be able to find us, will they?”

Han Sen shook his head. “There are limitations to remaining invisible, as I cannot keep it up for long.”

Little Invisible could make Han Sen invisible, but Han Sen was carrying another person. It would be too much for him to handle. The creature was still just a baby. And after the amount of time they had spent invisible earlier, all its energy had been drained.

“What do you plan to do, then?” Hai’er was standing atop a dune. She scanned the desert, afraid their nemesis would return.

“Don’t stand there,” Han Sen told her, motioning her down from the top of the dune. Then, he said, “I thought you were of the Pirate. You might just be Viscount, but you should be able to stay alive, right?”

“Normally, of course. Even if there was a Duke on our heels, I could stay alive. But this is Seven Spirit, so I can’t be entirely sure.” Hai’er gave a wry smile.

“If it was just one clone, do you think you could make it out?” Han Sen asked, after some thought.

“If there was just one, then I guess I could. But my method can only protect me.” Hai’er looked glum, saying that.

“That is enough. I will go to Seven Spirit’s true self. His clones will be coming for me, but that will allow you to go back the way you came and leave. If Seven Spirit does not recall his clones, though, then you’ll be on your own,” Han Sen said.

Hai’er looked at Han Sen and said, “Why are you helping me?”

Hai’er hailed from the Pirate. She found it hard to believe a stranger would help her formulate a plan of escape at his own expense.

Han Sen smiled and said, “No matter what reason he has for trying to kill me, he waited until only the two of us remained. That means he doesn’t want others to know what he wants to do. If you make it out, perhaps he’ll give up on the idea of killing me. And if he doesn’t give up, at least you can spread the news of what actually happened. You could inform Knife Queen. If you can’t, I’ll die for nothing. Vengeance won’t be sought.”

Han Sen paused, then went on to say, “Seven Spirit is coming after me. I cannot escape, and this is the only gambit we have available.”

Hai’er looked at Han Sen for a while, and then spoke. “If I can make it out, I will inform Knife Queen.”

“It’s a deal, then. You walk east, and I’ll go west.” Han Sen looked at the time, and then continued. “He should be on his way back by now. Go on, and good luck.”

Han Sen stood up and ran to the west. Although Hai’er was worried, she knew if she went along with Han Sen, she might very well die. So, she went east.

Hai’er did not dare run too quickly, though. She was afraid Han Sen might use her as bait, so just in case, she went slowly.

If Han Sen was going west, Seven Spirit should bump into him first whenever he turned back. When that occurred, she would have her chance to escape.

Han Sen was not that graceful, though. He walked west, looking around as he went.

Because he had been in that place for a while, and the music affected people a lot, it was fortunate Han Sen's will was as strong as it was. It didn't affect him as it did the others.

After a while, Han Sen stopped walking. He looked around and buried himself inside one of the dunes. Once inside the sand, he cast Petrify to turn himself into stone. Not even a deified elite could find him there.

Now, all Han Sen had to do was wait. He was going to wait until Seven Spirit came past. And when the hound did, he'd emerge.

If Seven Spirit was walking slow, then Hai'er should encounter a clone. If she did, she'd surely attract Seven Spirit in that direction. But Han Sen wasn't certain she'd entice the attention of Seven Spirit himself. If Seven Spirit found out that Hai'er was alone, he'd still want to search for Han Sen, more than anything.

Han Sen reviewed every possible way this situation could unfold, and he formulated a method for dealing with each circumstance. Suddenly, though, he felt as if a being had just walked past. He was buried under the sand, though, and he couldn't use Dongxuan Aura to be certain. He couldn't be sure that it was Seven Spirit.

The creature was slowly heading east. He had walked past where Han Sen was hiding, headed on an eastbound trajectory. Han Sen assumed it had to be Seven Spirit, since who else would walk backwards when they were this late in the game? Han Sen waited until the presence went by, hoping to head the opposite direction after Seven Spirit passed.

But Seven Spirit only walked east for a bit before turning back. He was searching for something.

"Han Sen, do you want to die down where you are? Or do you want to go out fighting?" Seven Spirit Buddha asked.

Han Sen frowned and thought, "Weird. How does he know I'm here?"

Han Sen was a little worried, but he didn't move from his position within the sand dune. If the felon knew where Han Sen was, it was likely that he'd already have attacked. He wouldn't bother talking.

Seven Spirit waited a bit for a response to come, but none came. He didn't actually know where Han Sen was. But it seemed as if he knew Han Sen was somewhere nearby, as he didn't leave the approximate region.

"He must have a way to sense my general presence, but he can't find me. This is a tough spot to be in," Han Sen was thinking.

Seven Spirit stopped. He mumbled something, and then the sand was kicked into turmoil again. The wind whipped into a raging tornado. Wherever it went, the sand flew everywhere. It dug up a thousand meters of desert.

"Marquises are stubborn. It must be costing a lot of power for him to keep searching that way," Han Sen thought. It also made him feel disappointment.

Even if he had turned into stone, Seven Spirit would find him if he dug too deeply into the sand.

Han Sen was not in a rush to move, however. He waited for the tornado to come. He wasn't going to move until he was found, in the hope that Seven Spirit would exhaust most of his energy.

Chapter 1943 - Intense Fighting

Chapter 1943 Intense Fighting

Several tornados raged across the desert. They were searching for Han Sen almost hungrily. When the tornados reached a specific dune, it exploded and a person emerged. He went straight west.

“Amitabha!” Seven Spirit waved his white robe, and the tornados retreated into his sleeves. He looked like a dragon with yellow wings as he came after Han Sen.

Han Sen was running forward, and the shape of a yellow dragon that was a few hundred yards long was giving chase. It looked like a yellow vortex that wanted to suck him in.

Han Sen’s blood was burning. His Spell armor glowed with light. Han Sen looked like a bird, soaring through the sky to avoid the power of that tornado.

Seven Spirit emerged from the trailing tornado and threw his palm forward at Han Sen. It turned into a golden, roaring lion. Han Sen’s body responded like a phoenix. He borrowed strength from the air itself to accelerate. His body performed a stunning arc to neatly avoid the lion’s attack.

Seven Spirit clicked his fingers, and then the gold light turned into the spirits of the Buddha kings. They all rushed forward to attack Han Sen.

There was a dragon, a lion, a sheep, an elephant, a horse, a bug, and even a fish. They were all different types of animals. The dragon was powerful. The lion was intimidating. The sheep was implacable. The elephant was strong. The horse was fast. The bug was creepy. The fish was spiritual. They all possessed a different power, and they all had an effective synergy with one another.

Han Sen borrowed the speed of the rabbit shoes to keep up with Seven Spirit, but he didn't dare fight him head-on.

A Marquise would be too strong. If Han Sen got hit, he could die in a moment.

"Seven Spirit! I have no grudge with you. Why do you want to kill me?" Han Sen shouted as he tried to hide from the scary attacks being aimed at him by the seven spirits.

Seven Spirit's desire to kill him was a grave issue. Even if Han Sen escaped, it could pose trouble in the future if Han Sen didn't understand why Seven Spirit wanted him dead. In order to sort this out, he needed to figure out what had inspired Seven Spirit's rage.

But Seven Spirit refused to answer. His finger kept making spiritual markings. He kept creating Buddha light marks and infusing them with a desire to kill Han Sen.

Han Sen saw Seven Spirit wasn't going to answer, and so after dodging the next spirit mark attack, he said, "I know! You must really love Speechless. But Speechless loves me, and she wants to have sex with me. That is why you're mad, right?"

Despite what he said, Han Sen did not think that was the reason. He just wanted to goad his nemesis into talking.

Hai'er kept saying Seven Spirit wanted to kill him because of Speechless, but that made no sense to Han Sen. Speechless' plan to seduce him had backfired, but no matter how prideful someone was, they could not kill a student of a half-deified elite over something like that.

There must have been an important reason why Seven Spirit wanted to kill him.

Seven Spirit heard Han Sen, though. With a look of fury, he said, "Shut up! Speechless is not someone you can be allowed to pollute."

After that, Seven Spirit's Buddha light shone. A giant Buddha hand rose from his back, then began approaching Han Sen. The palm had seven spirit marks, too.

Han Sen could see that the sky was now full of creatures, raining down towards him. Seeing it made him feel terrible. The seven spirits were scary, and he knew he'd be unable to dodge them.

Han Sen's eyes froze, then he ran in front of the Buddha horse. When he did, he felt an impact shudder through his body and into his own hand. Then he was sent flying.

Han Sen used Yin Yang Blast, and the impact of the horse's hoof sent Han Sen shooting off like a kite. He was flying far away.

Han Sen began running as soon as his feet touched the ground, coughing blood as he went. His opponent was too strong. He had used most of his power to deal with that force, but somehow, it had still managed to damage his body. If he hadn't been wearing his Marquise armor, he would have been killed.

Seven Spirit did not have the power to keep using Buddha Hand. The Buddha light dimmed, and he returned to pursuing Han Sen.

"Seven Spirit, it isn't strange for a girl to fall in love. You cannot change someone's heart by force. Speechless thinks I'm hot. She wants to be with me. Killing me is pointless, as I will always be in Speechless' heart. She'll never forget about me," Han Sen said, as he made his escape.

Han Sen could not defeat Seven Spirit, but if he could make his enemy mad enough to lose his cool, perhaps there was a chance of pulling through.

Seven Spirit's face turned green, and he said, "Shut up! Don't talk about her like that."

Seeing that Seven Spirit really did care about Speechless, Han Sen was delighted. He had to do what he could to live, so he said, "Speechless and I are so in love. She mentioned you to me. She said you were nice, but you are extremely boring. You don't know how to treat a woman. You don't even dare to touch her fingers. You aren't a real man!"

Seven Spirit did not say anything. He kept casting his seven spirits marks like mad. Han Sen had managed to gain some distance from Seven Spirit, so they weren't terribly close together. Han Sen managed to dodge every attack, too, so there wasn't as much of a threat.

Seven Spirit knew this was pointless, so he stopped attacking. He used his power to close the gap, instead. By doing that, he was able to catch up quickly.

"This guy is annoying!" Han Sen's chest was rumbling, and he was still coughing up blood. He was thankful he had his mutated blood. He wasn't losing as much blood as he would have otherwise, but he could not heal.

"Seven Spirit, a man should be more straightforward. I only used a little effort to make her come after me. I touched her body all over, and you didn't even touch her fingers. You are such a sad man." As he provoked Seven Spirit, Han Sen kept thinking about how he could survive this.

"Shut up!" Seven Spirit was enraged. His Buddha light brightened considerably, and then he used a thousand Buddha Hands.

This time, he did not use his seven spirit marks. He merely pulled out a wooden instrument. He struck it, and the sky flashed above them. Han Sen felt a rumble of thunder in his heart.

"Argh!" Han Sen felt electricity course through him. More blood spilled from his lips, and he almost fell over.

Chapter 1944 - Taking

Chapter 1944 Taking

Seven Spirit sprinted toward Han Sen. He wanted to slay Han Sen as soon as he fell. But Han Sen only dipped a little, then immediately sprang back to his feet. His speed did not diminish, either, as he kept on running forward.

Seven Spirit's brow furrowed. He wielded his wooden gong with a thousand Buddha hands.

Dong!

The sound of thunder rumbled in Han Sen's heart, like it could annihilate the spirit of any being.

But Han Sen was not affected, and he continued running. In the times between Seven Spirit's use of his thousand Buddha hands, Han Sen was able to increase the distance that separated the two.

Seven Spirit frowned harder. He channeled all his power into his legs so he could focus on catching back up to Han Sen.

Due to Han Sen's provocation, Seven Spirit had cast the scariest powers he had. It had cost him a lot of energy, and the distance between the two was quite large now. He didn't want to risk exhausting more of his strength.

Han Sen's speed was a boon of the rabbit shoes. Beast souls had their own power, and they didn't tax Han Sen's own energy reserves. As a result, he'd never have to slow down.

They both kept running across the desert. Seven Spirit kept trying to attack Han Sen, but Han Sen was able to evade each and every strike. Han Sen's opponent was unable to damage him in the slightest.

When Han Sen was hit by the Buddha's sonic attack, he had been injured. Fortunately, he had practiced sonic hyper geno arts in the past. He was no stranger to what they could do. When Seven Spirit attacked the second time, he used Yin Yang Blast to reverse some of the Buddha's sonic power that was bearing down on his Marquise armor.

It made it look as if he was not affected by the Buddha's second sonic attack. His Marquise armor, however, was full of cracks. He had indeed been injured. Still, Han Sen was able to hold on. And with his speed not slowing down, Seven Spirit believed Han Sen had not been damaged by the Buddha's sonic attack.

If Seven Spirit struck the wooden gong more, Han Sen wouldn't be able to withstand it.

"This guy is annoying. It is lucky that I am able to understand a bit of the reach of his strength." Han Sen used his rabbit shoes to keep on running.

Han Sen had nothing else to do right now, and so he had to keep on doing this. Seven Spirit was using all his power to chase Han Sen, and Han Sen didn't think he could continue doing this indefinitely.

"I am going to tire you out! I'm not afraid of you, because I have a beast soul." Han Sen gritted his teeth and ran. He was going to compete with Seven Spirits with stamina, and nothing else.

Seven Spirit was pledged to do the same. He couldn't kill Han Sen, and his marks were useless. He didn't attack, and so he preserved his energy for the purpose of running.

Seven Spirit did not think Han Sen, who was a Viscount, could keep up that speed for long. He had a plan.

If Han Sen kept running like that, the noise of Heaven would bear down louder and louder. Seven Spirit had a Buddha geno art that granted him a strong resistance to the noise. He did not think Han Sen could last as long as he would under the power of those sounds.

Once Han Sen was controlled by the music, Seven Spirit would have Han Sen's life under his thumb.

When Seven Spirit stopped talking, Han Sen decided to provoke him some more. He hoped his nemesis would be angered into attacking again, exhausting more of his energy.

Seven Spirit did not say anything. He did not attack, and he just kept chasing. Looking at Seven Spirit's eyes, he seemed like the devil. His entire body carried a bad aura.

While Han Sen ran, he saw a few shadows ahead. When he drew nearer, he noticed it was Luo Ji and a few others.

Han Sen ran to Luo Ji and shouted, "Mister Ji, help! Seven Spirit wants to kill me."

When Luo Ji heard Han Sen, his own face changed. He then shouted, "Run!"

They all ran without hesitation. In Luo Ji's heart, he yelled, "Han Sen is an *sshole who's going to get me killed!"

Luo Ji's brain responded quickly to this. He knew what was going on here.

Seven Spirit wanted to kill Knife Queen's student. If Knife Queen knew about this, the Buddha and the Rebate would suffer a big divide. If anyone saw Seven Spirit chasing Han Sen, they might be killed.

Luo Ji ran fast, but when he turned around, he saw Han Sen was next to him. Luo Ji couldn't outrun him. Luo Ji shouted, "You *sshole! We have no grudge with you. Why bring us harm?"

Han Sen thought to himself, "You did the same to me in Demon's Grave; this is you getting your just deserts."

Han Sen had his rabbit shoes, so he was able to run faster than Luo Ji. When Han Sen was about to pass them by, he leaped over their heads.

Luo Ji knew he could not let him pass. If he did, Seven Spirit would reach him first, and Luo Ji and his people would be killed.

Luo Ji shouted, “Block him!”

After that, he drew his knife out and tried to cut Han Sen. The knife came at Han Sen like a demon. The black smoke lurched toward Han Sen, and it made onlookers think there’d be no way for him to block it.

The Demons around Luo Ji tried to attack Han Sen, too. They had not practiced Sky Demon Sutra, and neither did they have Sky Demon powers. All they used were geno arts.

But they were all Earls. And there was a Marquise in their midst. When they attacked, they did so with grand strength.

Han Sen did not move, and the Sky Demon powers hit Han Sen. So did the others, with their scary attacks. Han Sen’s body exploded like a water balloon.

Above their heads, though, Han Sen’s body reappeared. He flew right over them like a bolt of light. What they had attacked was one of Han Sen’s clones. He produced it from his Moon skills.

“Split up!” Luo Ji could not prevent Han Sen’s advance, so he barked the command and ran. Each Demon went off in a different direction.

Han Sen, seeing Luo Ji respond so quickly, thought he was something of a genius. But even so, he was as evil as an old fox. Han Sen was hoping the crew could buy him some time, but that looked like it might be unlikely to happen.

They all ran their separate ways, and Seven Spirit Buddha was unable to catch up to kill them all. There was no point in killing them, and he appeared to be letting them go.

What happened next shocked Han Sen, though. Seven Spirit shone with gold. His body became golden, and he expanded three meters in every direction. Each side of his head grew an extra face, and his body sprouted an additional six arms.

He had eight arms and four faces. He looked like a weird Buddha statue.

“This guy is a xenogeneic!” Han Sen’s face changed, and he knew what he was going to do.

Chapter 1945 - Luo Ji's Guess

Chapter 1945 Luo Ji's Guess

Seven Spirit had four faces. The left one was smiling. The right one was crying. The back one was evil and very scary-looking.

The eight arms were raised at a variety of different angles. A spirit spell powered his strange body as he flew forward.

Han Sen heard some screaming and explosions coming from behind him. He turned around and saw a few of the Demons—who had been running a kilometer behind him—get ripped apart. Their bodies were scattered all over the sands, splattering blood everywhere.

Seven Spirit, with his gold Buddha body, chased after Luo Ji. He was the only one of his party who was still alive.

Luo Ji knew he could not outrun the villain, and so he roared. His Demon smoke enshrouded the blade he wielded. He sent a full-powered Sky Demon attack towards Seven Spirit.

Sky Demon's shadow swallowed Seven Spirit, but in less than a second, the shadow was torn apart. The four-faced, eight-armed Buddha that Seven Spirit had become escaped and teleported to Luo Ji. His arms grabbed Luo Ji, and Luo Ji watched with shocked eyes as the monster tore him apart.

"That is cruel!" Han Sen was not in the mood to watch, so he kept running through the desert.

After Luo Ji's body was ripped apart, a black smoke came out of the body and landed on Han Sen. Han Sen felt the black smoke go into his Sea of Soul. His body could not prevent it from getting inside.

Ordinary geno universe creatures had a Spirit Sea. Han Sen's Spirit Sea was his Sea of Soul, and it was unique to beings that came from the sanctuaries.

The black smoke went in, and when it did, Destiny's Tower shone. It was like a giant funnel that sucked the black smoke into the tower.

"What is this place? Let me out!" The black smoke was now screaming from the top floor of Destiny's Tower. The voice belonged to Luo Ji.

Han Sen did not have the time to figure out what the black smoke was right now, though. Seven Spirit had killed all the Demons at once, and that hadn't bought Han Sen as much time as he had hoped. His nemesis was catching up from behind once again.

Luckily, Seven Spirit's xenogeneic form had not increased his max speed. He was still unable to catch up with Han Sen, and that was why Han Sen did not feel the need to transform, either.

Seven Spirit was not in a rush, though. He released his xenogeneic transformation and returned to his normal form to chase Han Sen. Becoming a xenogeneic might have increased his strength, but it had three times the energy cost.

Remaining in a xenogeneic form wasn't a good idea.

The chase continued, and Han Sen hoped to encounter someone else across the sands. He was hoping for a Duke, but as he ran, he didn't see hide nor hair of anyone else.

"I don't know if Hai'er escaped," Han Sen thought to himself. That was because he had not seen Seven Spirit's clones return. It made him wonder how Hai'er might have been faring.

Han Sen kept running for the next few days. Most of his power came from the rabbit shoes he used, but he still felt tired.

Seven Spirit's stamina level was incredible. He was still on Han Sen's heels, and he hadn't slowed down.

"This guy is annoying!" Han Sen's tired body still chugged along. Heaven was like an infinitely large realm, the ends of which could not be reached. The next horizon was always just desert.

"I can't just keep running like this forever. I have to reach the other end so Seven Spirit won't attack me. How will I get to the other side, though?" Han Sen had been thinking this over and over for the past few days. He couldn't come up with a solution.

Han Sen put his mind into Destiny's Tower. He spoke to Luo Ji, who was now a pillar of black smoke. "Luo Ji, do you know how to reach the other end?"

"You got me killed. I won't tell you. Go to hell!" The black smoke boomed with Luo Ji's angry voice.

Han Sen coldly said, "If I escape, you can still live this way. If I don't, you won't even be alive as a black smoke."

After that, Han Sen took control of Destiny's Tower and made it shine. It shone on the black smoke, and the black smoke looked like water that had touched burning steel. The smoke was vaporizing, and Luo Ji was screaming.

"Don't kill me! I'll tell you," Luo Ji shouted.

"Don't feed me a single lie. If I die, you die. If I can escape, I will keep you alive. You'll also be a witness for Seven Spirit chasing me," Han Sen said.

Luo Ji said, "Heaven is not a xenogeneic space. It is a deified treasure, but this treasure came from a deified elite of the Buddha. Even they can't control it. They can only control a portion. Although they only control a small section, it is not difficult for them to trap people. If you get pinned, it will be impossible to reach the other end."

“But if they cannot control Heaven totally, we can escape their control somehow, right?” Han Sen asked.

“That’d be difficult. Every time Heaven opens, only ten people can reach the other side. That isn’t a coincidence, you know. The Buddha do this on purpose. I made inquiries into those who did reach the other end, and I discovered that they are all close friends of the Buddha. Not many enemies can reach the exit,” Luo Ji said.

“If you know this, then what were you still doing here? You must know of a way,” Han Sen asked.

Luo Ji paused, and then said, “I have a guess, but I don’t know for certain. I have come here to find out.”

“Tell me.” Han Sen looked back and saw Seven Spirit was still giving pursuit. He wasn’t worried that Han Sen would be able to escape Heaven.

Han Sen thought to himself, “I’m afraid that what Luo Ji says might be true, but if so, then the Buddha have full control over who makes it out the other end. It isn’t random.”

Luo Ji wasn’t certain, but under pressure from Han Sen, he relented and told the story.

Many factions had researched the Buddha Heaven. They had guesses similar to Luo Ji’s, but no one had proven their authenticity. This was primarily because the Buddha forbade King class sorts from entering the Buddha Heaven. Ordinary Nobles could not do much in the Buddha Heaven.

Luo Ji consulted many people that had reached the other side, and people that had gone deep without reaching the end. He gathered a lot of information and came up with a guess.

Chapter 1946 - Heaven's Music

Chapter 1946 Heaven's Music

The Buddha could not control Heaven in its entirety. If someone traveled to the area that was not under the control of the Buddha, they had a chance of making it to the other end.

Luo Ji thought the area that the Buddha did not control was under the Sand Sea.

“Once you enter the Sand Sea, you will see some white dunes. They’re different from the ones of yellow sand. You won’t find them if you don’t look, either. Once you find them, though, head for them immediately. Then, you can enter the region that the Buddha don’t control. This is merely my theory, though. There’s a chance I am incorrect,” Luo Ji said.

“If it’s not correct, then you know you will die with me. It is best you tell me everything,” Han Sen said to Luo Ji as he continued running.

“There is no more for me to tell. That is all I know,” Luo Ji said.

“Really? I don’t think you’re the sort of person that goes on an adventure with nothing but a guess,” Han Sen coldly said.

“You can’t say that! The whole reason I am here is because the place the Buddha control might have a treasure that the deified elite left behind. That is why I came here in the first place,” Luo Ji answered.

Han Sen kept running, looking all around. He was pivoting his head to look for the white dunes Luo Ji had mentioned. There were many dunes around, but there wasn’t a single white one.

After running for a while, Han Sen’s eyed gleamed brightly. Amidst the bumpy dunes of the desert, there was a smaller dune between them. It was only two meters tall. The dune

was a little white, and if you did not peer at it closely, you might not have seen a difference at all.

“I found your dune. So, how do I get in?” Han Sen asked Luo Ji as he ran for the dune.

“Some peoples have been known to accidentally run inside, usually when they were getting attacked. I don’t know exactly how to get in, but I was planning to try digging,” Luo Ji answered.

Han Sen stopped hesitating. He pulled out Ghost Teeth Knife and slashed a Fang attack towards it.

The knifelight struck the little dune and created a big hole inside it.

Han Sen was very pleased with the result. His Ghost Teeth Knife had created a big hole, and the knifelight was still moving forward. The attack had punched through easily, as if it was hollow down below.

But if you looked from above, you’d see a hole with sand at the bottom.

Han Sen clenched his jaw and went inside the dune. Han Sen did not feel as if he was hitting sand. It felt more like water. It seemed like he was drifting down, like he was sinking.

Seven Spirit, who had caught up by that point, hesitated for a moment. He still decided to jump in.

Eventually, Han Sen’s eyes brightened. What he saw shocked him.

When he went through the dune, he didn’t arrive in some cave. It was another world, complete with its own sky. It was like he was traveling through the skies.

It was different from the desert above, too. Here, he could see gold springs and giant gold trees. Every tree had a gold temple.

Light glowed everywhere. There was a Buddha mist that covered a temple, splitting the light into many colors. It looked like a Heaven of its own, but there was no pain and violence like in the Heaven above.

“Is this the real Heaven?” Han Sen frowned because the music was stronger there. Even he was starting to feel that pressure. His legs trembled, and it seemed as if he was about to start dancing.

Han Sen used his will to regain control of his body. Before he could decide where to go, he heard a noise and Seven Spirit dropped down behind him.

Han Sen tried to leap towards the gold forest that was visible in front of him, but he felt as if he was grounded and could no longer go airborne. So, he kept running forward.

Seven Spirit did not follow him. He looked at Han Sen and laughed grimly. “Han Sen, this Heaven is not a place you can freely access.”

“Really? Because I just did. So, what? Are you going to come and kill me?” Han Sen didn’t look back as he shouted.

“If you keep going, you’ll be dead without me lifting a finger,” Seven Spirit said simply.

Han Sen wished to say something more, but Seven Spirit went on. “It is almost time.”

And then a bell chimed. Han Sen’s brain felt as if it had just exploded. He almost collapsed to the ground. The tolling of the bell was far more powerful than the music.

Seven Spirit put his hands before him. Then, a Buddha light shone. His forehead produced a cold sweat with the difficulty of what he was casting.

Seven Spirit coldly looked at Han Sen, who was lying on the ground. He walked towards Han Sen with a Buddha light. He turned into his four-faced, eight-armed Buddha form and said, “Dying in the face of such music is your luck.”

Han Sen wished to say something, but he heard another bell chime. He did not know where it came from, but it echoed across the entire world. Han Sen was on the ground, and the chiming of the bell had him coughing up blood again.

“Seven Spirit, why do you want me dead?” Han Sen asked Seven Spirit, since he was having a hard time standing up_

“It is because you deserve death.” Seven Spirit spoke each word from all four mouths. They each had a different tone, and it was like four people telling him all at once. It looked very creepy.

After that, the three-meter-tall Seven Spirit came charging towards Han Sen. Eight of his arms had eight different spirit marks, and they were all coming to attack Han Sen.

Dragon, lion, sheep, horse, elephant, bug, and fish; all seven Buddha lights were collected and sent rushing toward Han Sen.

Han Sen rolled across the golden floor to dodge the seven mark attacks. Then, he got up and ran towards the golden forest again.

But the heavenly music was getting louder and louder. Han Sen was starting to lose control of his body. He started dancing a little, a morbidly amusing thing to see.

Seven Spirit, who was behind Han Sen, could tell he was having trouble walking. Seven Spirit himself had already turned into a xenogeneic, but he was losing control.

Han Sen followed the music and kept running the same way, dancing as he went. Seven Spirit could not kill him, but Han Sen had been attacked by those spirits, and he had incurred an injury.

Seven Spirit used his lion spirit to attack Han Sen, but the arm twitched. The lion landed on the golden ground and did not touch Han Sen.

“Seven Spirit, you finally cannot handle this music anymore.” Han Sen suddenly laughed. He brushed off the dirt on his front and stood up. He looked very lackadaisical, as if the music hadn’t affected him at all.

“Impossible!” Seven Spirit’s face went slack.

Chapter 1947 - Sky God Possession

Chapter 1947 Sky God Possession

Ordinary people could not withstand the music, and the chiming of the bell was far more grueling.

Even Seven Spirit himself, who had practiced the Buddha geno art and acquired the four-faced, eight-armed Buddha form, was having a hard time under the bell's oppression. He was losing control of his body.

Han Sen was a Viscount, and yet he had escaped the music. Seven Spirit could barely believe it.

The ordinary heavenly music and the bell were not physical attacks; they were more like a torturing of the mind. But this was a department where Han Sen excelled. His will was as strong as a deified elite's, so he wasn't affected by the Buddha Heaven's music.

He pretended to be affected so he could lure Seven Spirit forward and ensure that the Buddha wouldn't give up chasing him.

Now, Seven Spirit had fallen under the bell's influence. And that meant it was time for Han Sen to strike back.

Han Sen's rabbit shoes were moving in a blur, flinging him forward like a shadow. The Ghost Teeth Knife gave off a purple knifelight as it came swinging at Seven Spirit.

Seven Spirit wished to flee, but as soon as he started to do so, his arm and legs flailed in a dance. His legs weren't following his commands, and he couldn't move the way he wanted to.

Pang!

The knifelight was broken by Seven Spirit's hands. The four-faced, eight-armed Buddha body was quite scary.

Han Sen's face did not change. He kept swinging the Ghost Teeth Knife and using Teeth Knife knife skills. His body continued to flash around Seven Spirit.

Seven Spirit stumbled back, using his eight arms to fight against Han Sen. But at various times, some parts of his body would lose all control. He began to make mistakes he wouldn't have, otherwise.

A moment was all that it took for him to make a big mistake. Even though Han Sen's body was inferior to Seven Spirit's, it was through all those mistakes that Han Sen could discern his flaws.

Ghost Teeth Knife's purple knifelight slashed down on Seven Spirit. It created a spark and left a white mark on his golden body. Then, it disappeared.

"What a powerful xenogeneic body!" Han Sen was shocked. He didn't cast Ghost Teeth Knife's power a lot, but it was still easy for him to kill an Earl. The fact that he couldn't leave much of a mark on Seven Spirit's body spoke volumes about just how scary the Buddha's body was.

Seven Spirit looked furious. His eyes shone gold, and his eight arms tried to generate a spirit to attack Han Sen. Now his body was losing more and more control, though. Too many of his flaws were being exposed. He couldn't suppress Han Sen as he had earlier.

Han Sen depended entirely on his rabbit shoes for speed. The Red Mink Gloves gave him increased power. With the two, Ghost Teeth Knife continued to hack at the four-faced, eight-armed Buddha body.

But his attacks could only leave white scrapes across the gold body. The Teeth powers could not latch onto Seven Spirit.

Seven Spirit wished to escape Heaven now, but it was too late. He fell back quickly, but the tolling of the bell was rather frequent. It affected him more and more.

Before Seven Spirit escaped from Heaven, his body fell completely into the dance. He couldn't stop that strange dance, and he couldn't get out of Heaven.

Han Sen was so happy, and he kept slashing at Seven Spirit. Using Jadeskin and Mutant Blood, he began to leave shallow marks on the gold Buddha body.

But that was enough. If he could leave marks, the Teeth power would slowly start to tear Seven Spirit's body apart. Although it was slow, over time, it'd be enough for him to kill Seven Spirit and his Buddha body.

Seven Spirit kept roaring with his four faces. He wanted to take control of his body and escape the Buddha Heaven, but his body had been hijacked by the music. Regaining control was a very difficult task.

"Why is he not affected? Impossible..." Seven Spirit Buddha took another hit from Han Sen. His eyes gleamed gold, and he looked angry.

Han Sen wanted to cut him a few more times before he left that place. When he exited, the marks would kill the felon slowly anyway. But before Han Sen could slash him again, Seven Spirit's eyes suddenly turned gold. Gold fire flared to life, and it burst out to wrap up Seven Spirit's body.

The body that had been affected by the music suddenly became still, thanks to that gold flame. He had stopped dancing.

"Han Sen, I said we would meet again soon." The four-faced, eight-armed Buddha, which was enveloped in fire, opened its four mouths to speak. A scary voice boomed out.

"Qing Jun!" Han Sen now knew who it was. The Sky God had been behind everything this entire time.

Seven Spirit's mind was completely under the control of Qing Jun. And in his true form, he was not affected by the bell. He cruelly laughed as he walked towards Han Sen. He said, "Han Sen, I have waited a long, long time for this. But don't worry; I won't kill you. You are a big delicious meal for one such as I will feast on your fear, your tears, and your death."

The voice of utter contempt echoed in Han Sen's ears. Han Sen felt terrible, but he brought out the red mist orb.

He couldn't deal with Seven Spirit, and now it turned out that he was being possessed by Sky God Qing Jun. There was no way Han Sen could triumph now.

Han Sen planned on using Red Mist King for his final bid. Although Red Mist King had barely any juice left in the tank, he'd kill Seven Spirit if he could land a hit on him.

Qing Jun looked so mad as he flared with gold fire. His demonic presence was insufferably strong, and it made the four-faced, eight-armed Buddha body look even scarier. It was like he was going to eat people.

Boom!

Qing Jun lifted his finger and gathered up a swirl of hot flame atop it. The fire gathered up Seven Spirit's Buddha light and flame powers. He used it only for a second, and Han Sen felt himself burn.

The four faces looked to be filled with vile hatred. Qing Jun controlled Seven Spirit's body. His fingers fired a gold flame towards Han Sen.

But suddenly, a bag was hanging around Seven Spirit's neck. The bag was incinerated by the gold fire. There was a yellow spell paper inside, and it was scorched.

When it burned, a weird light came out of the ash and went to Seven Spirit's forehead.

"Argh!" Han Sen heard a scream. The scream came from Qing Jun.

Chapter 1948 - Soul Armor

Chapter 1948 Soul Armor

Han Sen stopped in his tracks. He couldn't figure out what had just happened.

The light spell was stuck to Seven Spirit's forehead. It shone brightly, and Qing Jun started to scream as it gleamed.

"Who dares to trick me in such a fashion?" Sky God Qing Jun screamed. The gold fire began to lessen, and Han Sen saw a gold shadow writhing around Seven Spirit's body. It twisted as if it was in agony, which was extremely creepy to watch.

Although he did not know what had happened, Han Sen knew his chance to act had come. Rather than continuing to watch the spectacle, he moved forward to swing his Ghost Teeth Knife.

As the knifelight slashed across Seven Spirit's body, Qing Jun and Seven Spirit lost control of the four-faced, eightarmed gold Buddha body form. He screamed in rage as Han Sen hit him, but it was useless.

Qing Jun's will was suppressed by the light spell. His scream turned to pain. He had possessed Seven Spirit, yes, but he could no longer exit the body.

Seven Spirit's will was not strong enough to withstand the rhythm of the music. He could only watch as Han Sen continued to strike his hardy body.

No matter how strong his body was, though, it could not withstand a thousand hits. Lacerations began to appear across the gold Buddha body. Blood seeped out of the wounds, looking like liquid gold.

Han Sen was cruel. He paid no mind to Qing Jun or Seven Spirit's cries.

“I will kill you... This has nothing to do with me... Kill you... It controlled me... You are killing a Buddha...” The four mouths spoke different words. Qing Jun and Seven Spirit were talking in tandem.

Han Sen ignored them, though. He continued his rage of slashes.

If Seven Spirit had been controlled by Qing Jun, then the Buddha hadn't meant to kill Han Sen. But given how long Seven Spirit had been chasing Han Sen, why hadn't the Buddha tried to fight off Qing Jun's control?

Without a doubt, the Buddha had some reason to hope for Han Sen's death. It did not matter if Qing Jun had possessed Seven Spirit or not.

Seven Spirit's roaring echoed across the heavenscape, but his struggles were futile. Han Sen delivered a thousand blows, striking Seven Spirit's neck over and over. Eventually, he was able to lop the head of four faces off. The gold blood squirted everywhere.

“Marquise-class xenogeneic hunted: Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha. Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha beast soul obtained. Xenogeneic gene found.”

That voice sounded inside Han Sen's head. He was glad he had managed to obtain some sort of reward, following the trial he had just been put through.

Seven Spirit's xenogeneic body crumpled. The gold flames were not extinguished, though. The light spell was still sticking out of the fiery shadow's forehead.

Pang!

The light spell suddenly exploded. The gold flames shattered, and Qing Jun's roaring disappeared along with it. Nothing more remained.

...

As this was occurring, a ship departed the Buddha Kingdom. A man, dressed in rich clothes, was resting upon a seat. His mouth spoke words only meant for himself. “I can't

believe Qing Jun possessed someone. He had it coming. This damage will put him off for some time. What an *sshole, to think of touching one of the Han family.”

...

Han Sen pulled out a bottle. He collected the blood of the Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha. Its blood was the xenogeneic part of its body.

After everything was done, he took a look at the beast soul.

Viscount-class Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha: Soul Armor

Han Sen was shocked. He had seen armor beast souls before, and those were simply titled armor. Han Sen was unsure what soul armor meant. Without hesitation, Han Sen summoned the beast soul. A gold armor suddenly wrapped him up, and he could feel how powerful it was.

It resembled the gold armor for Geminis, but it looked like ordinary beast soul armor. It didn't look like anything special.

Han Sen tried to generate power to punch with it, but as soon as he moved, the gold armor began to shine. A Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha appeared directly behind him, and when he punched, he did so with the Buddha's gold light. It had the same power that Seven Spirit had possessed.

“D*mn! This Soul Armor is strong.” Han Sen was so happy, as he had never possessed armor like this before. Wearing the armor granted him the power of a Marquise. And since it was from Seven Spirit, it was even stronger than normal.

“I don't know if other people can see the Four-Faced Eight-Armed Gold Buddha that appears behind me. If they can, that might be bad,” Han Sen thought to himself as he put the beast soul away. Then he looked over the Heaven.

In a hall of the Buddha, a candle went out. Burning Lamp Alpha's eyes widened, and many of the Nobles around him seemed stunned. Burning Lamp Alpha had not shown surprise in more than a thousand years.

"Seven Spirit is dead," Burning Lamp Alpha spoke slowly, with his face all twisted.

"With Seven Spirit's power, there is no way Han Sen was able to..." The Buddha were in shock.

"How... Wasn't Seven Spirit going to get the Knife Child?" He knew he had misspoken when the Buddha King spoke the Buddha catchphrase.

"Whoever killed him must pay!" Burning Lamp Alpha was calm, but his calm was frightening.

Seven Spirit was his first student in a thousand years. Burning Lamp Alpha believed he had what it took to become deified. Now that he had simply died, Burning Lamp Alpha was furious.

"Han Sen... He... He..." A Buddha Duke that was watching over Heaven screamed.

"What happened?" Clear Sea Buddha frowned at the Duke.

"Han Sen has reached the end!" The Buddha Duke looked strange.

"What? He did? I thought he wasn't on the list." Clear Sea King did not believe it.

"I don't know, but he has. Come take a look." The Duke was having trouble explaining, so he waved at the Buddha mirror and instructed it to reveal Han Sen's body.

All the Buddha Kings could clearly see that Han Sen had reached the other end.

“He entered Heaven with Seven Spirit. Now he is making it out, and Seven Spirit is dead. He must have killed him.” Burning Lamp Alpha stood up from his lotus seat. He walked towards the door of Heaven.

Chapter 1949 - Turning into an An

Chapter 1949 Turning into an An

Burning Lamp had suffered thousands of years of pain, but he refused to die. He wanted to remain long enough to see a new deified amongst the Buddha. Seven Spirit was his greatest hope of achieving this. But now that hope had been stolen from him, and it was difficult to fathom just how angry Burning Lamp really was.

The Buddha commoners were in shock. It had been years since Burning Lamp had been seen in person outside the palace, but now he stood in the city beside the western door. Many Kings were following him, also. The citizens of the city wondered what had happened.

Han Sen had traveled through Heaven until he came to the shore of a seemingly endless sea. A ship had been waiting beside the waters; a ship made of golden leaves. He embarked and used it to reach the other side.

On the other side, Han Sen found Speechless and others. There were ten of them. A few of them were the people that had seen following Speechless.

The music in Heaven had no effect on Han Sen. He had reached the other end, and when he did, a Buddha light landed on him. It energized Han Sen's cells and reinforced his body.

That reinforcement was not enough for Han Sen to level up, but he knew his body had gotten a lot stronger. It was quite effective, whatever it was.

Speechless, seeing Han Sen reach the other end, was flabbergasted. The others with her were surprised, too. They didn't expect anyone who wasn't in their group to survive the trip.

Speechless Lady saw Han Sen approach, as if to speak with her, but just before he did, a door appeared. The group traveled through the door, and they ended up outside the western door in Buddha City.

After they exited, they all took a step back in shock. Burning Lamp Alpha and the other kings were all there. Speechless immediately bowed before him, as did the others. They were all shaking and trembling in fear.

“You may be excused,” Clear Sea King told the others. Burning Lamp Alpha didn’t say anything, though. All he did was look at Han Sen.

The others sighed in relief. They staggered away. The feeling of pressure hadn’t been directed at them, but they still felt an overwhelming sense of danger, and that was enough to scare them.

Han Sen frowned when he saw this. He knew the Buddha wouldn’t be very forgiving, but he didn’t expect Burning Lamp Alpha himself to appear.

Clear Sea King, seeing Han Sen, asked coldly, “Han Sen, why did you kill Seven Spirit?”

After hearing that, everyone looked at each other in shock. Everyone knew of Seven Spirit and his incredible talent.

“Why are you saying that? When did I kill him?” Han Sen responded without an ounce of fear.

“You’re denying it?” the Buddha shouted. They were very angry.

There was such a frightening pressure being thrown about, and the people nearby were having difficulty keeping their breathing steady. But Han Sen, the one under the force of those questions, was wholly calm. He said, “You say I killed Seven Spirit? Okay, and where’s the evidence of that?”

“We will have evidence. You cannot deny this wrongdoing.” Clear Sea King didn’t want to let Han Sen talk. He flapped his sleeves, and they became large pieces of cloth that tried to cover Han Sen.

In the corner of a pavilion, Yisha’s eyes looked cold. The white chess piece in her hand snapped in half. She stood up, her back as straight as a knife.

The old man across from her was shocked. He placed a black chess piece down on the board. The pavilion was in a strange dimension, separate from reality and the rest of the world.

“Buddha Mark, our friendship ends here,” Yisha said, her voice cold. She slashed through the air and broke through the dimensional fabric. Then she leaped into the sky.

In front of the western door, Clear Sea King’s sleeve was going to wrap around Han Sen. But just as it was about to snare him, a purple knifelight ripped through the sleeve.

Yisha appeared directly in front of Han Sen, her posture as straight and regal as a queen’s. She looked emotionlessly at the Buddhas before her, and when she spoke, there was no fear in her voice.

“Burning Lamp, you are deified! But if you do not give me an explanation for this transgression today, I will see to the destruction of the Buddha Kingdom myself. I will destroy everything here without remorse.” Yisha spoke slowly, staring directly at Burning Lamp Alpha.

“How dare you, Knife Queen! Just because the Buddha have a fond relationship with the Rebate, it does not mean you can be disrespectful towards Alpha.” The Buddha Kings all started to yell.

Burning Lamp raised his head and said coldly, “Your student killed my student. Isn’t that enough for you to know?” “Evidence,” Yisha responded simply.

Burning Lamp looked at Yisha, and he moved his hand. It was not clear how he moved it, and it did not seem to be aimed at anyone in particular. But somehow, Han Sen had been grabbed from behind her.

Yisha looked cold, and she slashed towards Burning Lamp Alpha.

Burning Lamp Alpha did not look at Yisha, yet he moved his palm perfectly in time with her attack. Yisha's strike tore through the air, but it was like it needed to travel countless miles before it could hope to reach that hand. It was close, and yet so far.

Burning Lamp's other hand, which had grabbed hold of Han Sen, was shining. It covered Han Sen's body, and then all of a sudden, Han Sen was turned into an ant.

After Han Sen was transformed into an ant, Burning Lamp Alpha threw him back to Yisha. He coldly said, "For all our sakes, I will allow him to live. But you better watch it."

After that, the Kings walked away with their light.

As Yisha held Han Sen's ant body carefully, she kept clutching her knife. She didn't try another attack, though, because she knew it would be pointless.

"I'll be useless until I become deified. Being half-deified is just a joke." Yisha gritted her teeth, gripped the ant more firmly, and flew away.

The other races had seen what Burning Lamp did, and they were shocked. Even a half-deified elite like Yisha could not do anything to oppose him. She could not protect her student from being turned into an ant, either. It was scary to think about.

Han Sen had been shocked, too. His power had been too weak for him to even consider fighting back. And then Burning Lamp had simply turned him into an ant. He really did feel like he had been turned into an ant, too; it didn't appear to be some sort of illusion.

Chapter 1950 - Consume Skill

Chapter 1950 Consume Skill

“Han Sen! I’ve brought harm down on you. I cannot believe the Buddha had an ulterior motive for inviting me there.” Back on the ship, Yisha placed the ant down on the table and sighed.

Han Sen wished to speak, but he could not. He had become an ant, and he could no longer use any geno arts. He really was like a normal ant.

Han Sen was not frightened by his new state, though. He started skittering across the table, writing something out by the way he was moving. “The few items I had were stolen by Burning Lamp. He took my deified Knife Blank.”

When Yisha saw Han Sen writing this out, she looked overjoyed. She said, “You still have a will of your own?”

“I am aware, yes. What’s wrong?” Han Sen wrote.

“Burning Lamp’s geno art can change the genes of a being. He can turn a member of the higher races into a primal creature. Even their brains are reduced to the level of an animal. He didn’t kill you because turning into an ant is a worse fate. It would make you feel hopeless. There is no way he’d go easy on you, though, so it is strange to see that you still possess your own will. Are you sure you are okay?”

Han Sen considered his body. Aside from being an ant, and being unable to use geno arts with a human body, he had not been affected.

Han Sen explained the situation to her and asked, “How do we break the spell of this geno art, so I can have my proper body back?”

Yisha's expression looked sickened, and she said, "You can't. You really are an ant now. Unless there is a deified elite with the same talent, you are stuck like this."

There must be another deified elite with his geno art around. What about Kong Fei?" Han Sen asked. He didn't want to be stuck as an ant.

Yisha gave a wry smile, and she said, "Every deified elite has a skill of their own. Kong Fei is strong, yes, but he is not talented with loop geno arts. He cannot help you get your body back."

After a while, Yisha spoke again. She said, "From what I know, there is a deified elite that can do this, but I don't know where he is. Even if I wanted to ask him, I wouldn't know where to find him."

Han Sen gave a wry smile, but he wasn't going to give up. He said, "Don't worry, my Queen. If this is just a geno art, then there is surely a way it can be broken. I will be fine, sooner or later."

Yisha shook her head and said, "If I become deified, I will destroy that Buddha Kingdom."

"Yes, destroy it!" Han Sen was so angry.

It was the Buddha that commanded Seven Spirit to kill Han Sen, and they almost succeeded. But now they had been bold enough to do this. The Buddha were clearly impossible to reason with.

"I need power. That's my focus now, and I need that power if I am to level the Buddha Kingdom," Han Sen thought. He was furious over what had happened.

The news about Han Sen being turned into an ant by Burning Lamp had traveled to every corner of the universe. Many of them felt sorry for what had occurred, whereas others mocked him. Most people were just curious, though. They didn't care what he did next.

Han Sen obviously had no future now that he had been turned into an ant. He had a body that belonged to one of the most primal creatures, so his intelligence would be extremely low. It was unlikely he could practice anything. He wouldn't even be able to generate a geno armor.

But Han Sen had been able to kill Seven Spirit. It was a shame that someone of such strength had met such an ignoble end.

Han Sen rested on board the ship. Little Invisible and Ghost Teeth Knife were next to him. Yisha had retrieved them for him.

Han Sen had felt something was wrong just before Burning Lamp struck him. He had tossed Little Invisible and Ghost Teeth Knife to Yisha, but the moment he threw them, Burning Lamp had snatched him off the ground. He couldn't give his other items to her, and so Burning Lamp had taken them all.

He hadn't minded losing most of his things, but the half-deified Knife Blank was a wonderful item. He felt very bitter over that being lost.

Han Sen tried to use his powers while he was an ant. The Dongxuan Sutra, the Blood-Pulse Sutra, and Jadeskin had become completely useless for him. They were geno arts purposed for the human body. They did not work while he was an ant.

But when he ran The Story of Genes, it ran as smoothly as always. Because it functioned without a hitch, there was nothing to impede his continued study of the geno art. He could even make use of Spell.

Han Sen felt very relieved when he discovered this. If he was able to use some of his power, then he could be fixed. There was hope.

Han Sen wanted to try using his super god spirit mode to escape the ant form, but Yisha was on the ship, and she would surely notice if he used it. Even if he successfully turned back into a human, it would be a poor situation.

Han Sen remained patient, and he followed Yisha back to Narrow Moon. Yisha did not take him back to Planet Eclipse. He was put in the palace on Planet Blade.

Han Sen requested to go back to Planet Eclipse, but he wasn't permitted. So, he performed his The Story of Genes in front of Yisha and summoned Spell.

Yisha saw it, and she was shocked. "It looks like you haven't turned into a primitive creature at all. Maybe it is because of this The Story of Genes. This strange geno art is special. It can even disrupt deified powers. If you make it up to King-class, I cannot begin to imagine what it might do."

"My Queen, do you see? I have turned into an ant, but I still have the powers of a Viscount. You should send me to Planet Eclipse, because I have stuff to do there." Han Sen was now using Spell to communicate with Yisha.

"Okay, and I will focus on finding you a way to get your body back." Yisha seemed to have a thought, and she began searching through her records. She returned with a geno art. "You've turned into an ant, so you cannot make use of most geno arts. This skill, called Consume, is a geno art that belonged to a Consuming Ant. They are an old higher race, so perhaps it can help you in the time being."

Han Sen did not know why Yisha had given him the skill of Consume to learn. But it did suggest that she feared for Han Sen's possible recovery. If he practiced as an ant, there might be hope. It wouldn't be over.

Han Sen let Spell accept Consume, and then he went to Planet Eclipse. He wanted to find out if super god spirit could turn him back into a human.

Super god spirit gave him a certain amount of immunity to certain types of attacks, so it should have worked.

Chapter 1951 - Can You Not Treat Me Like a Monster?

Chapter 1951 Can You Not Treat Me Like a Monster?

Planet Eclipse.

Wang Yuhang was riding his bike across the mountains. He was wearing a pair of eye-catching sunglasses.

Little Angel and the others were ready to level up, but they had to prepare before becoming Viscounts. So they hadn't come hunting with him.

Wang Yuhang had also eaten enough xenogeneic genes to become a Viscount, but he lacked proper fighting experience, so it would be difficult. He didn't like sitting around, either, so he had gone out hunting.

Not long after, Wang Yuhang saw a young Kate girl on the trail. She was walking towards the mountains.

Wang Yuhang frowned. The little girl had a tiger-pattern of stripes, cat ears, and a cat tail. She was rather cute, but she looked like she was only ten or so. She shouldn't have been able to fight, so it was strange to see her out there all alone. Wang Yuhang turned toward her.

"What are you doing out here?" he asked the little girl.

The little girl, seeing him, looked at him queerly. She answered, "I am looking for my mother."

"Looking for her?" Wang Yuhang was shocked.

The little girl explained, “My Mom has been out hunting for the past two days, and she has yet to return. So, I am out here looking for her.”

“It has only been two days. She’ll be fine.” Wang Yuhang offered her some comfort.

Many of the mothers in the base had become Barons. They wanted better lives for their children, and so they hunted to supply them with easy points.

The little girl looked worried, and she shook her head. “Mom said she would return each and every day to check-in. She has always come back on time, except for this time when she hasn’t. She must have stumbled into some sort of danger, and so that is why I have come out here to save her.”

“You’re just a kid, though. What can you do? You should let the good folks at the base help you,” Wang Yuhang said.

“I did tell them, but no one believed me. They told me to wait a few more days. I’m sorry, I have to keep going.” The little girl started walking again, headed deeper into the mountains.

Wang Yuhang rode the bike up next to her, smiled, and said, “Are you willing to take a risky ride with me? I can take you on this, if that’s okay with you.”

“Really?” The little girl’s eyes shone brightly.

“Yes; but it depends on whether that’s what you want.” Wang Yuhang smiled.

Before Wang Yuhang finished talking, the girl had already jumped onto the back of his bike. She held onto Wang Yuhang’s back and said, “Please find my mother! I have no father, so I cannot lose my Mom.”

Wang Yuhang smiled and rose into the mountains. He asked, “Do you know where your Mom usually hunts?”

“My mother never hunts too far from home. She stays in the region so she doesn’t have to spend too much time traveling each night,” the little girl quickly said.

“It shouldn’t be hard to find her, then.” Wang Yuhang accelerated along the trail.

As soon as Wang Yuhang entered the mountains, a xenogeneic began running behind him, digging into the ground with its claws. It chased his bike like a hungry wolf. More and more soon gathered up, until there was a whole group of xenogeneics trailing them. They were all Barons, too.

The little girl looked frightened, and so she held onto Wang Yuhang. She shivered in fear, and she couldn’t bring herself to look back.

“If you are afraid, I can take you back now,” Wang Yuhang said as he rode.

“No, please take me to my mother. She is in danger. Please!” The little girl was trembling, but she never stopped begging Wang Yuhang to find her mother.

“Okay, then.” Wang Yuhang began working methodically to scour the mountainsides. There were many xenogeneics coming after him, but they were all slower than his bike. They couldn’t hurt him or the little girl.

Sometimes, xenogeneics appeared in front of them. But in such instances, Wang Yuhang was able to evade them. The little girl would hold his waist tightly when this occurred, and she almost fell off multiple times. Still, she asked him to keep going in search of her mother.

A few hours later, Wang Yuhang heard the cry of another xenogeneic. He frowned and decided to take a look. He found a group of xenogeneics surrounding a Kate woman. She was fighting one of them.

It looked like the group was just crowding around her to taunt her. The xenogeneics were enjoying it like some sort of sporting event. Many of them were Viscount class, too, and so they were much stronger than the Kate woman.

If they wanted the Kate woman dead, she'd have been a pile of bones by now. The woman, instead, was still engaged in battle. She was bleeding a lot, but she wasn't ready to give up the ghost.

As Wang Yuhang rode toward her, he could see the will and drive it must have taken for her to keep going. Some of the wounds she had incurred were deep enough to reveal her bones. She should have passed out by now, considering the amount of blood she must have lost.

"Mom!" The little girl squealed, trying to jump off the bike. But Wang Yuhang caught her and pulled her back on. There were many Viscount xenogeneics there. He didn't have the Marquise armor, so he couldn't move too rashly.

"We need backup, but it appears to be too late for us to call on others." Wang Yuhang stroked the little beard on his chin as he thought.

The woman, seeing the little girl, looked towards them. Her face paled and she screamed, "Run, little Rain! Get out of here!"

The xenogeneics then noticed Wang Yuhang. They became extremely alert, and their interest in playing with the woman seemed to vanish. One of the xenogeneics moved over to cut the woman's neck and be done with it.

"No!" The little girl's eyes opened wide as she screamed.

Wang Yuhang's expression looked strange, but he accelerated towards the woman, swinging his sword as he went. Just as the creature swung its claws toward the woman's neck, the sword slashed the xenogeneic's back and made it squeal.

Wang Yuhang used the time he had bought to swoop into the crowd. He picked up the woman in one motion as he passed by.

Wang Yuhang turned the bike to leave the mountain, but the xenogeneics had already reacted, running towards Wang Yuhang. The Viscount xenogeneics started to glow as they surged forward.

Wang Yuhang, still riding the bike, evaded them. The mother and daughter held onto him tightly, but they looked like they were losing hope.

The crowd behind was approaching fast, and the gang that had chased Wang Yuhang earlier was still waiting just outside the valley. They were like hungry wolves, adamantly blocking his attempt to depart.

“This is why I hate women and kids.” Wang Yuhang sighed. He spun his bike and stopped. The scary xenogeneics from both sides were coming quickly. The mother and daughter held each other, sitting on the bike. They shivered in each other’s arms, with their eyes closed.

“If you can, could you please not treat me like a monster?” Wang Yuhang ignored the xenogeneics. He spoke to the mother and daughter, but his voice was so quiet, they could barely hear him.

Boom!

A noise like a generator sounded. Wang Yuhang’s body brimmed with an unspeakable power. The noise came from his body, but there was no light, smoke, or shadow to see.

But the power inside him exploded like a volcano. Even his bike seemed to react, releasing clouds of smoke out of the exhaust.

Suddenly, the world quietened down. The xenogeneics that wished to attack Wang Yuhang stopped. They all froze and looked at him strangely.

The next second, they ran at Wang Yuhang again. But just before they touched him, the two groups collided to kill each other.

Blood and limbs were strewn about everywhere, all across that trail. As the generator noise ran, the two groups fought each other until they all died. Some of them lost their arms, but still they fought on.

The way they looked at Wang Yuhang was strange. It was like he was the most precious person in the world. Some looked at him like a treasured lover, for whom they would do anything.

More likely, Wang Yuhang had become their queen. They had to kill their opponents to make themselves the strongest; all so they could make with the queen.

Blood. Blood was everywhere.

A few hundred xenogeneics were forced to kill each other. They did, and they all died. The sole survivor was a Viscount. It was extremely injured, and it ended up crawling towards Wang Yuhang.

Cha!

Wang Yuhang thrust his hand into its wound and tore out its heart. It was dying, but the look it gave Wang Yuhang was not a look of hate. It was one of pleasure.

The Kate family held each other. They looked at Wang Yuhang with shock; they had been chilled to the bone. At that moment, he was scarier than the xenogeneics.

“That’s why I like sticking with Han Sen. It is because those monsters make me look like a person. If no one is afraid of me, I feel like a person.” Wang Yuhang spoke quietly to himself, and he looked rather sad.

Chapter 1952 - Consume

Chapter 1952 Consume

“Cool! You became an ant; how did you do that? Teach me! If I learn it, I can sneak into any women’s locker rooms that I want to!” Wang Yuhang’s eyes opened wide. He looked at Han Sen, who was being held by Spell, and smiled.

Little Silver, Little Angel, and Dragon Lady looked at Han Sen’s ant body curiously.

Han Sen felt depressed. He sent his words to be spoken through Spell. So, Spell spoke for him by saying, “Cool my *ss! Go and find a way to turn me back to normal.”

“How did this happen?” Wang Yuhang used his finger to poke Han Sen, and he laughed.

“Stop! Poke me again and I’ll be mad.” Han Sen felt even sadder now. Being pressed by a finger felt as if he was being bullied.

Planet Eclipse’s news channels were blocked. The others had not heard about what had happened to Han Sen during his time with the Buddha. So, Han Sen took the time to explain what had transpired.

“A deified elite’s power? Even if we could suppress his ability, he’d still be too powerful. It won’t work, and none of us have the same element as him.” Gu Qingcheng stopped to thought, and then proceeded to say, “What about the power you used to transform? Even Purgatory Heaven did not work on you. Could you not try that?”

Han Sen said, “If there is no other option, I will have to do that. But I am afraid that if I recover too quickly from this state, Yisha might become suspicious. So, I will wait like this for a few days.”

“It won’t be suspicious after a few days?” Wang Yuhang did not understand.

“When I become an ant, I cannot use geno arts. I can only use The Story of Genes. If I can recover, I plan to use The Story of Genes as an excuse. Nobody else has ever practiced it before, so no one will know if I’m telling the truth or not,” Han Sen said, through Spell.

“In that case, let’s see if we can help you.” Dragon Lady gathered up her power, and then put her finger on Han Sen. She wanted to send her power to him.

It was useless, though. Little Angel and Xie Qing King gave it a try as well. But the results were the same, and it did not work.

“You guys did that on purpose.” Han Sen watched them all come to press a finger against him. When he looked at their faces, he didn’t feel quite right.

Little Angel and Dragon Lady were not Viscounts yet, but Gu Qingcheng and Xie Qing King were, so there was no need for them to use a finger to touch Han Sen. Even so, that was what they did.

“No! I promise we did not plan on squashing you to death.” Wang Yuhang laughed.

“I promise, it really isn’t like that.” Xie Qing King spoke with a tone of sincerity, but it was obvious that he was trying to suppress his urge to laugh.

“You *sshholes!” Han Sen felt so mad, and so he jumped atop Spell’s shoulder. Spell then started to fire shiny bullets at them.

After chasing them away, Han Sen took a break. He felt bored, so he decided to read the Consume skill that Yisha had given him.

The Consuming Ants were a famous higher race of the universe. They could consume everything, so they were far scarier than humans.

Humans were omnivores, and they could eat both plants and animals. But the Consuming Ants were even better. They could eat metal, ore, any and all sorts of materials. There was nothing they were not able to digest.

The stronger the ant was, the more digesting power they had. The geno art they learned was called Consume. Practicing the skill required a body that was similar to the Consuming Ants, though.

Burning Lamp Alpha could turn others into ants, but he hadn't given Han Sen the body of an actual Consuming Ant.

Han Sen was just a common ant without any intelligence. He could not generate a geno armor, so there was no way he could learn Consume.

Han Sen decided to give it a try anyway. After all, there was nothing else he could do while he was in the form of an ant.

After Han Sen read through the geno art, he learned that Consume was able to fortify one's stomach. It made the digestion capabilities of a person's stomach quite scary. He could digest something like steel in a short amount of time, and turn all types of materials into energy. They would be absorbed by the body.

"This would be good for people who love to eat. If they could learn this geno art, people could eat a lot more than usual in the sanctuary," Han Sen thought.

When Han Sen had been in the sanctuaries, he had wanted a geno art that could digest stuff quickly. He had never been able to find a good one, though.

Consume appeared to satisfy all of his needs, but only Consuming Ants could practice it.

Han Sen wanted to try it, so he started practicing.

He thought it'd be difficult, but after a few whirls, he felt a chill inside his stomach. It was an odd sensation.

"I can practice this?" Han Sen was shocked.

Since the skill was having an effect, that meant he could practice it.

Since Han Sen had nothing to do, he kept practicing with Consume. He learned quickly, and he achieved beginner status in a few short days.

“I wonder if Metal Eater can practice something like this? I can take it back to the Sanctuary for him.”

But Han Sen was just practicing for the time being. He didn't mean to practice it all that much, as he didn't want to be an ant forever.

After a few days, Han Sen could not wait anymore. He wanted to see Ji Yanran, so after four or five days, he tried using his super god spirit mode.

A holy light captured Han Sen's body. Wherever it went, he became a human again. He became a transparent super god spirit.

“It works! Hopefully, I won't turn back into an ant when I deactivate the skill.” Han Sen was worried, so he quickly stopped super god spirit mode.

The light disappeared from Han Sen's body, and he returned to his ordinary human form. He did not go back to the shape of an ant.

“Good! Being human is better than being an ant.” Han Sen sighed.

He could not wait to use the Blood-Pulse Sutra to open a portal to the Sanctuaries. So, he went back to his home in the Alliance. Han Sen planned to stay there for a while. He wanted to delay revealing the fact that he had healed to Yisha.

But after chilling at home for a while, he felt uncomfortable being away from his usual life as an adventurer.

Chapter 1953 - The Han Family Daughter is Born

Chapter 1953 The Han Family Daughter is Born

Since Han Sen had nothing better to do, he tried using Consume. He did not know if he could use it now that he was in human form. It surprised him that he was actually able to activate the geno art.

When he used Consume, something changed in his stomach. It was like a xenogeneic's, but not as strong. His stomach became much stronger than usual, though.

As he practiced Consume more and more, the power of his stomach increased. It wasn't long before Han Sen was able to digest steel. Whenever he swallowed a hunk of steel, it'd be converted to energy. The digestion capabilities were scary.

Han Sen was afraid that Consume might affect his body, but after a few tests, his worries were eased. There were no negative side-effects, and so he continued to practice the skill.

Han Sen let Xie Qing King and the others practice Consume, as well. Aside from Metal Eater, though, none of the others were able to make any headway with it.

Han Sen did not know why he could practice it. Maybe it was because of The Story of Genes, or maybe it was because of his time spent as an ant—he couldn't be sure.

Han Sen was surprised Metal Eater could practice it, though. It would be good for the creature's evolution, and he was developing at a much faster rate than before.

Han Sen thought about whether or not he should bring Metal Eater over to the geno universe. He was strong, and he had a broad comprehension of Consume, but Han Sen thought that would be a negative. He was afraid that Metal Eater would draw trouble when he crossed over. So, for the time being, he decided against it.

“When will I have the power to challenge deified sorts? If I had that power, I could bring people and creatures over from the sanctuaries without worry. I could build a strong army and bring ruin to the Buddha,” Han Sen thought to himself.

“Dad!” Bao’er came back from school and gave Han Sen a firm hug.

“You have grown up a lot, Bao’er! You are heavier and taller,” Han Sen said, stroking her head as he held her.

Bao’er squinted her eyes and said, “Can I go to the geno universe with you now?”

“Not yet. You still need to grow a bit bigger. But soon, okay?” Han Sen smiled.

“Hmph.” Bao’er pouted and acted all angry.

“Okay, I promise you. And I’ll visit you more often, even though I’m there in the geno universe.” Han Sen rubbed her cheeks and smiled.

Nine months later, it was time for Ji Yanran to give birth. Han Sen, Han Yufei, Luolan, Han Yan, and Ji Yanran’s parents were all waiting outside the delivery room.

Ji Yanran gave birth in their own private hospital, where no outsider could reach them.

They were so nervous waiting outside. They couldn’t hear a peep of what might have been happening inside.

They didn’t hear a baby crying, but suddenly the doctor screamed, “Argh! Ghost!”

Everyone was shocked, not knowing what had just happened. Ji Yanran hadn’t screamed, but the doctor sure had.

Han Sen ran inside, and he was shocked at the scene before him.

A half-transparent baby hung in the air, her hands moving.

“Super God Spirit mode!” Han Sen’s eyes opened wide, looking at the child in surprise.

Han Sen's daughter was in super god spirit mode. She was scarier than Littleflower, who had super king spirit mode. This was like a new and improved version.

Fortunately, the baby did not keep super god spirit mode activated. After a while, she returned to looking like a normal baby, and it brought Han Sen much relief.

If it remained in super god spirit mode forever, that would have been bad. Normal sustenance could not reach her, and she could not be fed milk.

The Han family daughter was born without issue. Han Sen had learned his lesson the last time, and he knew better than to suggest that Ji Ruozhen come up with names. Acknowledging this, Ji Ruozhen felt terrible.

Han Sen was also bad at naming things, though. After a long time of thinking, he decided to name the baby Han Ling'er. She was the Han family's sacred daughter.

Everyone was very careful as they took care of Ling'er. Littleflower had been prone to blowing buildings up as if it was nothing, after all. They could never risk getting Littleflower mad.

Han Ling'er had super god spirit mode, so that was an even scarier prospect. God only knew what would happen if she became displeased.

But the family was fortunate in that both babies were surprisingly well-behaved. They were very quiet, and people loved them.

Ling'er's birth also helped to wash away the pervasive sadness that had haunted them since Littleflower had been taken. Ji Yanran looked far happier, but she always made sure to mention a wish for Littleflower to return. She'd frequently mention how much Littleflower would love his little sister.

Han Sen stayed at home with Ji Yanran. He was not in a rush to return to Planet Eclipse. He could practice anywhere, and he practiced a lot in the hopes he could become an Earl soon.

Becoming an Earl was much harder than becoming a Viscount. For the next half a year, Han Sen made very little progress. No geno art had yet to reach Earl class.

But that did not mean the six months were wasted. He spent time researching the red mist orb's copper palace, and he was able to learn that the throne was a teleporter. It did not just teleport him to Planet Meka. Any Meka xenogeneic space had a teleporter, and could be accessed via that throne.

Han Sen tried using it a few times. Whenever he visited a planet, no Meka attacked him. He was able to figure out that he was now going to a business planet that belonged to the Meka. They allowed other races to visit freely.

He was attacked the first time because he had entered a private planet of the Meka. Any intruder, even another Meka, would still be attacked.

When Han Sen had nothing better to do, he used his beast soul armor to walk around one of the Meka planets. He wanted to take a look at their culture.

The seven little minks had been fed xenogeneic genes by Han Sen. They had been able to generate xenogeneic gene materials, which then allowed them to generate a xenogeneic gene battle body.

Han Sen walked down a street belonging to the Meka, and a few spherical heads caught his attention. One of them was Clear Sea King. There were a few other Buddha's there, too. Speechless was amongst them.

"What are they doing with the Meka?" Han Sen wondered, looking at them.

The Meka were good at making xenogeneic gene battle bodies, but aside from the Meka themselves, not many creatures could use them. It didn't seem likely that Clear Sea King and the others were on the planet to buy battle bodies.

Clear Sea King and the others walked past Han Sen, and none of them recognized him with his beast soul armor on.

No one could see the Four-Faced Eight-Armed Gold Buddha armor; only the user could. Outsiders wouldn't notice a thing..

Chapter 1954 - Endorsemen

Chapter 1954 Endorsemen

Han Sen planned to see what they were up to, but after walking a couple blocks down the street, Clear Sea King and the others dipped into a giant building with Meka guards. The place was private, so Han Sen couldn't just wander in. He asked around and came to know that it was a house belonging to a King-class Meka.

Han Sen couldn't find out any more than that, as there was no reliable source of information. Han Sen waited outside for a while, but they still hadn't emerged after some time, so he surmised that they had to be staying there.

Han Sen couldn't do anything reckless on a planet belonging to the Meka, so he decided to leave. As he turned around, a naughty little mink leaped out of his pocket and started to scuttle down the street.

Han Sen immediately grabbed the other six while chasing after the escapee. He called out its name, "Little Seven, don't run! Come back!"

Han Sen was bad at naming names, so he named them sequentially from one to seven. They went by their numbers.

Little Seven was the naughtiest and grumpiest of the bunch. Not even Han Sen could bring him to heel. Even so, all seven little minks regarded Han Sen as their master. And even if they did run off, they'd always come scurrying back when they got bored.

Han Sen kept shouting after it, as he ran.

Han Sen did not want to force the mink back, though. He let it run and followed it. The place belonged to the Meka, so no one would care too much if a Meka was found poking about.

Little Seven was interested in something, that much was certain. He wasn't running around aimlessly. He ducked into a building and hurried upstairs.

Han Sen followed, and he noticed it was a large mall. The shopkeepers were all outsiders, too. He followed Little Seven to the second floor, then into a particular shop. He heard some noises coming from the back.

When Han Sen approached, the little mink was wearing his xenogeneic gene battle body. The red armor wrapped up the little creature's body.

The little mink was still just a Baron, so it was very small. Due to this, it couldn't generate much juice. The battle body was simple, and when the mink generated more materials, the battle body would improve.

Little Seven was running around the shop, munching on a mouthful of chestnuts. The shopkeeper kept trying to chase Little Seven away, but the mink was small and nimble. It could run around and quickly grab items from the shelves.

Little Seven was eating everything it could reach. The other six smelled the food and wanted to come out. Han Sen managed to push them down and seal his pockets, though. He didn't need them adding to the trouble.

The Kate shopkeeper soon looked ready to cry. Soon, two Meka guards jumped at Little Seven, but because of how fast and nimble he was, he was able to dodge them. By doing so, he managed to steal another two pieces of food.

The Meka guards were Viscount class, but not even they could catch Little Seven, who was merely a Baron.

Han Sen moved and grabbed Little Seven, then pulled the mink away from their attacks. He quickly said, "I am so sorry!

I will reimburse you for the losses incurred."

“No! If you misbehave here, you must be investigated,” one of the Meka said.

“I am sorry, but he is just a child. Please give him another chance, and I will pay twice the amount owed,” Han Sen said quickly. He presented Little Seven and said to it, “Come on now and apologize.”

Little Seven had done wrong, though. Han Sen wasn't going to needlessly spoil the thing.

Little Seven bowed and lowered its head. Then, it made some tzi tzi noises, as if it was apologizing.

“We can talk about the payment later, but you have to follow us. Otherwise, we cannot report to the shopkeeper,” the Meka security guard said.

As Han Sen wondered what he should do, someone shouted from the shop. “Hang on!”

Han Sen looked to where the call came from, and he saw a Feather emerging from the back of the store. He ran in front of the Meka guard and spoke with him. Then the guard left the shop.

“Thanks; I will be reimbursing you for the losses incurred,” Han Sen said, as he saw the Feather approach.

“Not too much inventory was lost; do not worry! If you are able to, though, could we talk inside?” the Feather said, while looking at Little Seven in Han Sen's hand.

Han Sen was confused, but he still nodded and followed the Feather to the back of the shop. He was behaving like an officer.

The Feather closed the door, and then looked at Han Sen and Little Seven, and said, “My name is Mach. What is your name?”

“My name is Dollar, from the race of humans,” Han Sen answered.

Mach repeated Han Sen's name, then thought of something. He asked, "What is your association with this Meka?"

"I am it's guardian, sort of," Han Sen answered.

After hearing Han Sen, Mach's eyes gleamed brightly. He said, "Does that mean you can command it?"

"What does that mean?" Han Sen frowned.

Mach worried that Han Sen might misunderstand his intentions, so he quickly explained, "If you can command it, I would like to invite it to endorse my shop."

"An endorsement?" Han Sen never thought something like would happen.

"It's like this..." Mach explained.

Mach's store sold xenogeneic fruit. For the Meka, the fruit could replace gathering actual xenogeneic genes. After the Meka ate them, they could release materials for the xenogeneic gene battle bodies.

But the fruits weren't popular. Not many of the Meka knew about them, so the sales had been quite slow. Mach was not a rich fellow, and he couldn't afford big advertisements, so he hadn't found a way to market his wares.

Little Seven's performance surprised Mach. He thought this could be his chance.

Little Seven could endorse the food for him by participating in the Meka's battle body races. If Little Seven was able to get a good score in the Baron tier, and did so by advertising the goods he had just eaten, the xenogeneic gene battle body would be better than any other advertisement.

Little Seven would need to get a very good score, but after Mach saw Little Seven's performance, he thought the little mink could achieve first place.

Chapter 1955 - Conspiracy

Chapter 1955 Conspiracy

Han Sen initially didn't want Little Seven to participate in the battle body races, but when he heard what they could win if Little Seven achieved first place, he changed his mind. It was a battle body fluid synthesized by the Meka themselves.

Battle body fluid could level Little Seven up. It could turn Baron battle bodies into Viscounts. For the Meka, this was great.

Mach offered Han Sen a very good deal, and Little Seven showed interest in giving it a shot. So, Han Sen agreed to participate.

He signed a contract with Mach. If Little Seven achieved a good result, he could even gain shares in Mach's company. The better Little Seven did, the more shares Han Sen would receive.

If he earned first place in the Baron team, they could gain a forty percent share of the business.

Mach helped Little Seven sign up. He got the permit to join very quickly, and Han Sen took Little Seven to take part in a few of the early matches.

The other young Meka Barons could not compete with Little Seven. He kept winning over and over, which made him ecstatic. He began to draw the attention of important members of the audience.

Inside a Meka King's palace, Clear Sea King and a Meka King were watching the Baron battle body races.

"Amitabha! Making this trade will require a lot of effort on your part," Clear Sea King said to the Meka King.

That King looked like a giant bear. And while it munched on food, it responded, “It’s fine. If you have enough Galaxy Sand, we can give you as many babies as you want.”

Clear Sea King watched the match without expression. “Galaxy Sand is not a problem, but I need some good Meka children. There are a few babies here I really like, so please help me acquire them.”

“Some of the young ones who have joined the matches are from big families. I can try to get some of the other ones, but the prices?” Battle King stopped talking, but his meaning was obvious.

“I will give you ten times as much Galaxy Sand as we discussed. What do you think?” Clear Sea King said calmly, pointing out the competitors that he wanted.

“The ones you have chosen are very talented Meka babies. If you are not famous, you can’t...” Battle King looked glum.

“I will give you twenty times the Galaxy Sand. This is a serious offer,” Clear Sea King said simply.

“Okay, good. Then it is a deal.” Battle King agreed.

“Hopefully we can conclude this trade quickly and take those babies back to the Buddha,” Clear Sea King said. He looked at the Meka babies in the match, paying particular focus to Little Seven, who was ravenously chowing down on some fruit.

Little Seven was doing very well in the Baron tier. He had managed to reach the top ten. Other Baron Meka’s didn’t stand a chance against him.

Little Seven kept winning and winning, and his renown soon started to spread. He quickly became a Meka superstar.

He ate a geno fruit every time he competed, which was something others soon came to notice, as well.

Shortly after, the sales in Mach's shop started to rise. It delighted him.

But many people came to Mach's store to simply ask about Little Seven, too. He was worried about this, and so he told Han Sen about it. But even without Mach mentioning it, Han Sen could feel things going that way.

There were eyes all over him and Little Seven. It seemed reasonable given the fame that Little Seven had gained, but Han Sen still felt that something was amiss. There were people watching him 24/7, and their methods of observation were too secretive. They were not low-class Nobles, either; they had to be Earls, at least.

If Han Sen did not have his powerful Dongxuan Sutra, he'd have never noticed that they were observing him.

"Who are these guys?" Han Sen wondered, but then an idea crossed his mind.

At night, Han Sen took to the streets. He disappeared in the mall.

After a while, a Meka walked around and around in the mall. He looked terrible.

"Weird. I thought he was here. How did he just disappear?" the Meka said to himself. He then reported what had happened through a communicator. He walked around the mall again, to confirm that Han Sen and Little Seven were nowhere to be found. Then, he left the mall.

Han Sen came out from a corner, wearing his Dongxuan Armor. Even his energy had changed.

He followed the Meka to a giant building, then watched the Meka enter.

"Isn't that the building that Clear Sea King went into? Are they involved? Have they discovered my true identity?" Han Sen thought to himself.

But that would have been impossible. If Clear Sea King had discovered that Little Seven's owner was Han Sen, he would have attacked already. There would have been no need for him to wait.

It seemed obvious to Han Sen that their target was Little Seven.

Han Sen couldn't go in, but he could sneakily send in Little Invisible. If Little Invisible could snoop around inside, he would work like an invisible camera. The only downside was his inability to record voices.

Han Sen spoke to Little Invisible and placed him on the floor. The colors on its body changed to mimic the ground underfoot. Then, it vanished.

Little Invisible's camouflage was strong. Not even King class people would notice he was around. Han Sen still worried, of course, so he waited outside the building. If something happened, Han Sen would use Red Mist King to go save him.

Luckily, these fears didn't come to fruition. After a few hours of waiting, something landed on his shoulder. It was Little Invisible.

Han Sen brought Little Invisible back to Mach's shop. He went to his room and sat down with Little Invisible.

"Little Invisible, what did you see?" Han Sen asked.

Little Invisible's color started to change. It was like watching a show. It displayed the palace. After Han Sen watched was revealed, his face got all gloomy. Now he knew why they had their eyes on Little Seven.

Little Invisible had shown Han Sen many imprisoned Meka babies. Some of them had done quite well in the races.

“Meka have a complicated blood lineage. Sometimes, they sell out their own. But I cannot believe a King class elite would merrily sell off their own kind like that. Clear Sea King is here to buy them, but for what purpose?” Han Sen wondered.

Chapter 1956 - Galaxy Sand

Chapter 1956 Galaxy Sand

Clearly, the Meka Battle King and Clear Sea King had their sights on Little Seven. Han Sen was wondering if he should back out now, but as he was considering his options, a few people came out of the house. It was Speechless and the other Buddhas.

Han Sen did not see Clear Sea King; it was just the young Buddha men and women. Han Sen's heart jumped.

Han Sen followed them and turned on his Dongxuan Aura. He didn't put a lot of effort into hiding himself, as Speechless and the others didn't seem to be too paranoid. They were just walking around and chatting casually amongst each other, not suspecting they were being followed.

But Han Sen followed them for half a day without learning a single useful nugget of information. Their chatter was standard fare. Just as he was going to give it up, though, a Buddha man said, "What is the master thinking? Why would he swap Galaxy Sand for those Meka babies?"

Han Sen was surprised by this. He had heard of Galaxy Sand before. It was a famous treasure belonging to the Buddha, primarily.

Galaxy Sand was not really sand. They were the tears of a King class xenogeneic called Galaxy Dragon. Each teardrop would become Galaxy Sand, and it was a rare treasure.

Galaxy Sand possessed an impressive amount of energy. King class creatures that refined Galaxy Sand received many benefits. Low level creatures that used it would level straight immediately.

Clear Sea King was swapping it for Meka babies. It was a lot to give up, so he must have been doing it for something even bigger.

“Shush.” Another of the Buddha’s stopped him from talking. He then lowered his voice and said, “Don’t talk about it. This is where the Meka live; we cannot let them know about the trade.”

“What are we afraid of? This is the Battle King’s territory, and he is the one selling us the goods. What can they say about it?” The Buddha lifted his lips, but he didn’t look like he was going to push the topic too much further.

Speechless Lady frowned and said, “Just be careful. Let’s stop talking.”

Speechless and the others walked around, and then they headed back to Battle King’s house. Han Sen thought he wouldn’t learn anything more useful than that, but Speechless received a message. Then, she told the other Buddhas, “Buddha King has asked me to return. You guys go ahead, and I’ll go find out what’s going on.”

“Why don’t we go with you?” a Buddha said.

“It’s fine.” Speechless shook her head and then left.

Han Sen followed her. He could not fight Clear Sea King, but Speechless was just a Viscount. If he had to, he could take her.

Han Sen planned to capture her and ask her why Clear Sea King was snapping up the Meka babies.

Speechless walked alone as she headed towards Battle King’s house. When she turned one particular corner, however, she frowned. A man that looked like a Buddha, wearing gold armor, appeared in front of her. Something seemed odd about him, but she couldn’t quite tell what.

“I am Speechless, the Buddha Lady of the Buddha. Who are you? And why are you blocking my way?” Speechless Buddha Lady was being careful, and she watched the man closely as she spoke.

She recognized Han Sen’s armor. It was the man who owned Little Seven.

Han Sen didn’t say a word, and he simply threw his hand forward to grab her.

Speechless Lady saw the hand get bigger in her vision. It was like it was consuming the entirety of space. It felt as if she had nowhere to run, and it was now she realized she had bumped into an elite.

Speechless’s Buddha Light burst out. She summoned a Buddha sword. When it came to strike Han Sen, she spoke the Buddha catchphrase.

The distance to the Battle King’s house was two kilometers, so her cries would reach Clear Sea King. With his power, he could definitely come and save her.

But when she opened her mouth, she unleashed a power minus its sound. It was like an empty sonic blast.

Speechless’ face changed. Before she could react, Han Sen had grabbed her Buddha sword. Then, he used his finger to fire a coin. It landed on her chest.

Speechless suddenly felt so heavy. She ended up dropping to her knees on the ground. She braced herself with her hands, though, so she wasn’t completely flattened out.

Han Sen laid the Buddha sword across Speechless’s neck, coldly telling her, “I will ask, and you will answer. If you don’t, I will cut your head off.”

Speechless was putting all her strength into keeping herself from collapsing. The scary power from the coin made it feel as if her chest was going to explode. Pain radiated across her torso.

“Who are you? Don’t you know my Clear Sea King and the Meka’s Battle King are nearby? If you kill me, you’ll be joining me soon,” Speechless said, as if she was holding the ground at bay.

“I don’t know if I’ll be dead, but you will be for sure. That is, if you refuse to answer my questions. Why are you buying up the Meka?” Han Sen asked.

Speechless didn’t answer, and it seemed as if it was a secret she willing to take to the grave.

Han Sen swung the Buddha sword and cut open her armor. Her skin was revealed.

“What are you doing?” Speechless’ face changed.

“Don’t worry, I’m not interested in women like you. If you don’t answer me, though, I will strip you completely. And you can prance on down the street naked, so everyone can see you clearly. Only after will I cut your head off.”

Han Sen then went on to say, “I am an impatient man, though, so I will ask you one more time. Why are you buying the Meka?”

Speechless’ face remained unchanged. When she didn’t say, Han Sen cut the lower part of her armor off. He grabbed her by the scalp and started to drag her.

“We are buying the Meka to fix a deified weapon!” Speechless was shocked. She couldn’t think anymore.

“What deified weapon? And how does it get fixed?” Han Sen asked.

“I don’t know! I have only heard a bit about it, but I know it’s a knife. Only Clear Sea King knows the specifics,” Speechless quickly said.

“Ugh, you don’t know anything. Why would I need you?” Han Sen looked at Speechless without sympathy.

“If you let me go, I will tell you anything you wish to know! If you let me go and gather the information, I will surely not disappoint you!” Speechless said.

“I am giving you one last chance. If you still can’t answer for me right here, enjoy performing on the streets,” Han Sen answered, ignoring her plea. “Where is the Galaxy Sand you have stored to purchase the Meka? Don’t tell me it’s in Clear Sea King’s pockets!”

“But it really is with him...” Before Speechless finished, Han Sen grabbed her head again and dragged her across the street. Speechless* face changed and she shouted, “It really is on him! But I have a way to get it for you.”

Chapter 1957 - Taken Hostage

Chapter 1957 Taken Hostage

“What way? Tell me.” Han Sen looked at Speechless with interest for the first time.

“Galaxy Sand needs to be showered with starlight to be kept alive. Otherwise, it turns to simple stone in only a few days. I know when Clear Sea King will bring the sand out, and where he takes it to be replenished with starlight.” Before Speechless finished, Han Sen summoned a green tower and sucked her inside.

Entering a King class house and stealing their items was something Han Sen would do only if he was crazy. Speechless was only stalling for time.

Han Sen hid all the evidence he might have left at the scene, but Speechless was supposed to meet with Clear Sea King. If she didn't show up, Clear Sea King would notice something was amiss.

He didn't want to waste any more time than he had to, so he scrawled a few words on the ground where he was and then left.

Han Sen walked around the mall, and eventually, Battle King's subordinates saw him. On his way back to Mach's shop, all the subordinates that belonged to Battle King began to move.

News of Speechless's kidnapping had already spread. When Clear Sea King saw the words Han Sen had left on the ground, his face looked extremely sour.

“Clear Sea King, do not worry. I will take responsibility for this. I will return the Buddha Lady to you alive, but I want to find out who is messing around in my territory.” Battle King looked horribly angry, too.

The enemy had kidnapped a Buddha in his own territory, and had asked for Galaxy Sand in exchange for her return. It was humiliating Battle King.

If Battle King hadn't taken responsibility, Clear Sea King might have believed he was the one who started all this—to steal the Galaxy Sand.

“Amitabha! I will let you handle this,” Clear Sea King spoke the Buddha catchphrase. His face did not change, but he looked worried.

Battle King might have said he was going to help, but Clear Sea King was still suspicious of his possible involvement in the kidnapping.

On Battle King's planet, someone had kidnapped Speechless in secret. And furthermore, she was there under Clear Sea King and Battle King's protection. Clear Sea King believed that Battle King must have been the kidnapper.

“Give me one day.” Battle King knew Clear Sea King was suspicious of him, and so he looked fairly gloomy.

The entire planet started to search for Speechless, all following a command issued by Battle King himself. But after a whole lot of time, Speechless went undiscovered. The kidnapper's identity was still unknown.

When the investigation concluded, the most suspicious person they found was Han Sen, who happened to disappear from the watch of the spies. But Han Sen was just a Viscount, and it seemed impossible for someone such as that to kidnap someone like Speechless without making a ruckus.

At a time like this, though, Battle King wasn't willing to let the slightest possibility by.

When Han Sen took Little Seven to participate in the next contest, Battle King's best subordinate, Blood Kill Duke, took control of Mach's store with further subordinates.

Mach was just a businessman with no money. He wouldn't risk co-operating with Han Sen, but he informed them of how he and Han Sen met and did not hide a single thing.

After Han Sen returned from the contest, Mach invited him in. But when he entered, Blood Kill Duke and his people quickly surrounded Han Sen.

"What are you doing?" Han Sen frowned.

Blood Kill Duke brought out a red chain and tied up Han Sen. He said, "Take him back for interrogation."

Quickly, Han Sen was brought into Battle King's house. Little Seven was taken away.

In a lonely room, Blood Kill Duke looked at Han Sen and coldly said, "Dollar, if you hand her over now, all will be fine. Don't make me do this."

"You should tell me what you want me to hand over first," Han Sen replied.

"Where is Speechless Buddha?" Blood Kill Duke asked Han Sen.

"In a safe place!" Han Sen laughed.

Blood Kill Duke was shocked. He did not expect Han Sen to admit he was responsible, so that was quite unexpected.

After pausing, Blood Kill Duke looked murderous once more. He shouted, "Hand Speechless over and I will let you live!"

Han Sen laughed and said, "If you dare touch me, I can assure you that you'll never see Speechless again. Why don't you give your method a try, and see what Clear Sea King and the Buddha will have to say about it?"

"This is Meka!" Blood Kill Duke growled.

He shone with a red light, which then flew swiftly down on Han Sen.

Han Sen didn't even blink. He just looked at Blood Kill Duke. He made no effort to dodge, and he just sat there quietly.

Blood Kill Duke was annoyed, but he knew he couldn't do anything. This was something that involved the Buddha.

Things would go badly for him if he messed this up.

"What do you want?" Blood Kill Duke asked after he regained his calm.

"Galaxy Sand. You are too low level to talk to me, though. Give Clear Sea King a ring and tell him to come over," Han Sen said.

"Don't forget that your life is still in my hands here. I can make you suffer." Blood Kill Duke hummed.

"Kill me or give Clear Sea King a shout. It's your decision," Han Sen said, as calm as ever.

In the control room, Clear Sea King and Battle King witnessed everything. They were surprised to hear he was the one who kidnapped Speechless Lady.

"Amitabha! Let me talk to him," Clear Sea King said.

Battle King nodded. Dollar had put him in a pretty bad situation. He couldn't kill him, either. It would be best if Clear Sea King went and talked with him.

Blood Kill Duke was given an order by Battle King, which prompted him to leave. Then, Clear Sea King came in. Clear Sea King sat next to Han Sen. He did not say anything to Han Sen, and merely looked at him.

Han Sen's energy was not outstanding. It didn't seem too powerful, but Han Sen didn't appear to be trying to hide anything, either. It was like he didn't care about his own presence, even when a King was sitting right in front of him.

Han Sen wore armor so Clear Sea King couldn't recognize his face. After a while, Clear Sea King said, "How much did they give you? I can give you ten times more."

Han Sen laughed and said, "Don't even think about it. No one else is behind this. You either kill me and Speechless dies with me, or you give me Galaxy Sand. Those are your two choices."

Chapter 1958 - Skyne

Chapter 1958 Skyne

“Why should I believe you? If I give you Galaxy Sand, what guarantee do I have that you’ll let Speechless go?” Clear Sea King was not mad, and he spoke in a level voice.

“Give me Galaxy Sand, and I will take you to her,” Han Sen said implacably.

“Until I see her, you’re not getting anything,” Clear Sea King said.

Han Sen laughed and said, “Then you should just kill me! I can tell you that Speechless is somewhere on this planet. Give me Galaxy Sand and I will take you to her. Otherwise, I won’t make any deals.”

Clear Sea King asked Han Sen, “Speechless is really still somewhere on this planet?”

Han Sen did not speak. He merely smiled.

Clear Sea King asked him a few more questions, but all Han Sen did was smile. He eventually realized Han Sen was not willing to say anything more.

Clear Sea King stopped his questioning and returned to Battle King’s lobby.

Han Sen was not in a rush, and he continued waiting where he was. He knew Battle King was going to resume a search across the whole planet—a search that would conclude with no results. Clear Sea King would come back and talk to him again.

Seven Spirit was dead now, so Speechless was the Buddha’s next hope for a deified elite. Burning Lamp Alpha greatly supported her now, so he couldn’t allow anything to happen to her.

A day later, Clear Sea King came back to Han Sen and asked him, “Speechless is still on this planet, you say?”

Yes. Give me the Galaxy Sand and I will take you to her. The trip will take less than half an hour,” Han Sen said matter- of-factly.

Clear Sea King looked at Han Sen and felt strange. A normal Viscount shouldn’t have been able to keep such calm composure in front of a hostile King.

“Why even take Speechless?” Clear Sea King asked.

“Because you have put Little Seven in your sights,” Han Sen said.

“Amitabha! That is Battle King’s business. This is none of our business,” Clear Sea King said.

“Speechless told me that you are snapping up Meka babies for the restoration of some deified weapon,” Han Sen said.

Clear Sea King frowned. This confirmed to him that Dollar had indeed taken Speechless. Aside from Clear Sea King himself, only Speechless knew about the need to fix-up a deified item. Not even Battle King knew when he was buying the Meka for.

While Clear Sea King sat in silence, Battle King’s voice rang in his ear. “If Speechless is indeed on this planet, you can agree to his demands. I will make sure he doesn’t earn a single grain of sand. Otherwise, I take full responsibility.”

Battle King knew Clear Sea King had yet to make a decision because he still suspected that Battle King had something to do with the kidnapping. So, Battle King had to show that he was innocent in all this.

He was also confident that Dollar couldn’t escape with the Galaxy Sand that had been reserved for him.

After hearing Battle King, Clear Sea King did not hesitate to say to Han Sen, “Take me to Speechless and we will conduct this trade.”

Han Sen looked at Clear Sea King and smiled. He didn’t speak, but it was obvious what he wanted.

“I will give you Galaxy Sand, but you have to promise me that Speechless is on this planet.” Clear Sea King stared at Han Sen.

“Yes, I told you. It’ll be a half-hour walk. Do you think I can walk off this planet in thirty minutes?” Han Sen smiled.

Clear Sea King looked at Han Sen for a while. He eventually placed a box on the table and opened it. There were many shining crystals inside. Each sparkled with the radiance of a diamond. They were so shiny that they were difficult to look at.

The energy surrounding the items was immediately discernable. Anyone could tell they were some good stuff.

Clear Sea King cast a gold light and broke the red chains around Han Sen. Then, the gold light surrounded Han Sen.

Han Sen could move, but the power in his body had been somewhat restricted by that gold light.

Han Sen picked up the box and counted the contents. Then, he placed it in his pocket. “The amount is correct. Let’s go. I will take you to Speechless. Oh, and yeah, give me back Little Seven.”

After that, Han Sen stood up and walked to the door.

Clear Sea King was next to him, and the guard did not stop Han Sen from leaving.

Someone sent Little Seven over. Han Sen took Little Seven back and walked out of Battle King's house. No one stopped him, but Battle King's people were everywhere in the surrounding radius of a hundred miles. Not even a mosquito could escape their watch.

"Let's see how this plays out. Once you reveal the Buddha Lady, I will make you suffer." Battle King's expression was cruel as he stared at the camera. He couldn't tolerate anyone committing such a misdeed on his planet. To him, Han Sen was a very dead man.

Clear Sea King walked next to Han Sen. He believed Han Sen could not escape with the box of Galaxy Sand.

Han Sen walked slowly, and he looked at the Meka all around. The shops and streets were all roadblocked, so there was no chance of him running.

"You sure you don't want to go faster? If I don't see Speechless in half an hour, the deal is off. Then, I will attack you." Clear Sea King looked at Han Sen. Han Sen's calm demeanor was starting to worry him.

Clear Sea King did not detect any significant power from him, so he did not believe Dollar could escape.

"Half an hour is enough." Han Sen smiled and kept walking.

Han Sen was more popular than a superstar. All the cameras, weapons, and Nobles were trained on him. Even if Han Sen could fly, it was unlikely he'd escape from the planet.

The allotted time had almost passed. It had almost been half an hour. Han Sen had not even gone down a single street in that time. Battle King frowned and looked at the whole planet.

There was no other powerful King on the planet, so even Battle King wondered why Han Sen was so calm.

Half an hour went by, and Clear Sea King stopped Han Sen.

“Time is up; where is she?”

“Here.” Han Sen looked at all the Meka warriors, then back at Clear Sea King. He clicked his fingers.

Chapter 1959 - Red Mist King is Shining

Chapter 1959 Red Mist King is Shining

Han Sen's fingers flashed with gold. The sky suddenly lit up, as the golden lights became coins that rained down. They covered an area of a dozen miles.

Ordinary Viscounts would not have power such as that. At best, they could only encompass an area of a few hundred meters. But Han Sen had his Soul Armor boost right now. The shadow of the Four-Faced Eight-Armed Buddha lurked behind him, unseen. The Buddha light was inside Han Sen's body, imbuing him with the power of a Marquise. That was how he was able to summon the big Coin rain.

All the gold lights became coins, which landed across the Meka's xenogeneic gene battle bodies. It was like the Meka had been hit with big chunks of metal, making them heavier.

The lower level xenogeneic gene battle bodies crashed to the ground. The bodies belonging to those of a higher level began to move slower.

"Amitabha!" Clear Sea King spoke the Buddha catchphrase, but he didn't do anything. He went through the coinfall and came before Han Sen. He waved his sleeve like a cloud, trying to capture Han Sen inside it.

Han Sen didn't dodge, though. His left-hand possessed a red mist, and it shone. A strong red metal body came out of it. It threw a punch towards Clear Sea King.

Boom!

A scary red mist light punched into Clear Sea King's sleeve. The sleeve deflated and tore. The red light went through the sleeve, up and into his chest.

Clear Sea King started to bleed as his body was sent flying away. He went barreling down the street like a meteor, crashing into Battle King's ornate house. He broke the palace-like construct in half.

Everyone watching was stunned. No one could believe that a King had been sent flying like that.

Han Sen was shocked, too. He used Clear Sea King's mistake to give himself an advantage and opportunity. He didn't expect that a less-than-one-percent release of energy could be so powerful that it'd knock a King class into the distance.

Han Sen didn't spare much time thinking, though. Red Mist King picked up Han Sen and sprinted towards the teleporter.

There was a boom noise. All the buildings and xenogeneic gene battle bodies in front of Red Mist King were pushed away.

The Meka were still frozen, and not a single one of them moved. With Clear Sea King having been punched away, none dared step in Han Sen's path.

A roar came out of Battle King's house. Battle King was riding a giant, bear-shaped xenogeneic gene battle body forward, wanting to stop Han Sen and Red Mist King.

Battle King hadn't expected something of this sort could happen. He thought that since Clear Sea King was right next to Han Sen, Battle King himself would only have to make sure his subordinates were in order. He hadn't expected Han Sen to pose such a threat. Now it was too late, and Red Mist King was jumping into a teleporter alongside Han Sen, to disappear amidst the depths of space.

Battle King roared. His battle body broke the teleporter, but his anger was futile.

Clear Sea King came out of the rubble with lips caked in blood. He looked awful. He was injured, but most of all, he was angry.

Han Sen went back to the copper palace. He got out of Red Mist King's hand, and Little Seven came out of Red Mist King's heart.

That punch had consumed all of Red Mist King's energy. There was only 0.01% of energy left now, and it hurt Han Sen to see.

Luckily, he had managed to obtain one hundred Galaxy Sand crystals. If he hadn't gotten those, it would have been a grand loss.

Back on Planet Eclipse, Han Sen researched the Meka. He noticed that news concerning Dollar and Clear Sea King had spread far across the universe.

The Buddha and the Meka had put out an APB on Red Mist King and Dollar. If anyone could provide a lead that led to either of their capture, they would be handsomely rewarded.

Han Sen saw the rewards up for grabs, and fancied taking off his own head for Red Mist King to deliver.

The entire geno universe was talking about it, but they were mostly talking about Red Mist King.

People began talking about the last time Red Mist King had made an appearance. It became known that he was a rare Meka xenogeneic gene battle body, and that he must be King class.

But before that, no one had ever seen Red Mist King. Not even the Meka knew about him, which was fairly scary.

A mysterious xenogeneic gene battle body and a human named Dollar had managed to scam a King class Buddha and escape from Meka. It just didn't sound possible.

Many creatures now hoped to find them, in the hopes of obtaining the rewards put up by the factions slighted.

The Buddha were in a major rush to find him, in particular. They had just lost Seven Spirit, and Speechless herself had been kidnapped. It was a divine insult. But after a long time of searching, no one was able to find out anything concerning Dollar and Red Mist King.

When Yisha heard that Dollar had appeared on Meka, she herself assembled a group to find out more. But they didn't uncover anything, either.

Han Sen took the one hundred grains of Galaxy Sand to the Alliance. He planned on refining them while he practiced The Story of Genes.

Other geno arts could advance and achieve breakthroughs by simple practice, but The Story of Genes required some sort of external force.

Han Sen brought out the Galaxy Sand grains, but before he started refining them, he saw a blue shadow travel through the wall. It appeared like a phantom.

“Little Star, why are you here?” Han Sen was surprised as he looked at Little Star. Little Star had eaten many xenogeneic genes, and he was very talented. So, he had now reached the Alliance.

Little Star was very tame, and he was able to travel through materials. He had never entered a room without permission before, though.

Little Star's sudden appearance in Han Sen's room was very weird.

Little Star canceled its Starsea Travel, and it brought its shiny body right up to Han Sen. It was staring at Han Sen's Galaxy Sand.

“You want this?” Han Sen then thought to himself, “Little Star's original name was Starsea Beast. Galaxy Sand came from the Galaxy Dragon. Are they connected?”

Little Star nodded and started licking Han Sen's face.

“Bringing this back here cost me a fortune.” Han Sen looked at the box of Galaxy Sand with regret.

But seeing the look on Little Star’s face, he didn’t want to reject its request. So, he took one out and coughed. “I’ll let you try one.”

Chapter 1960 - Starsea Beast Evolves

Chapter 1960 Starsea Beast Evolves

Little Star was so happy, and it wagged its tail. It stuck out its tongue and consumed one whole piece of Galaxy Sand. It didn't even chew the thing before gulping it down.

"People might think you were a pig. You should at least try to taste it." Han Sen looked depressed.

Little Star did not listen to Han Sen, though. It started to shine, until a strange aura burst out from it.

"Don't generate geno armor here. Stop!" Han Sen did not expect that a single grain of Galaxy Sand would force Little Star to produce its geno armor, so he shouted loudly in surprise.

But Little Star could not control the process. So, Han Sen brought it to the space tunnel and took it to Planet Eclipse.

Little Star shone with starlight. And then, it generated a starry set of armor. Without stopping, the star armor melted into a geno fluid that was absorbed by its body. The generation was heading into a second cycle.

Little Star's second evolution was xenogeneic. Its starlight grew brighter, and it looked like a beast shrouded amid a countless number of stars.

Little Star finished its evolution, and then put its head next to Han Sen. It was staring at the box that contained the Galaxy Sand.

Han Sen hid the box behind him, but Little Star was still looking at Han Sen with its eyes wide open. It looked as if the creature was begging.

“I can only give you one more, then. But no more after this!” Han Sen felt pretty bad about it, but he gave in under Little Star’s gaze.

Little Star licked Han Sen and swallowed the grain of Galaxy Sand.

The most shocking thing was that after eating it, Little Star leveled up once again. It generated starlight power and became a Viscount.

“D*mn! These things are that good?” Han Sen gritted his teeth and decided to give another one to Little Star. He wanted to see how much he could level it up. If one level really did equate to one grain of Galaxy Sand, then that would be wonderful.

But Han Sen’s wishes were not fulfilled this time. After Little Star swallowed the third piece of Galaxy Sand, it did not level up. The stars around it grew brighter, but that was it.

Little Star looked at Han Sen, but Han Sen did not provide it with any more. He called Little Angel, Zero, Han Meng’er, and Dragon Lady. He gave them each a grain of Galaxy Sand, with the hopes of bringing them up to become Viscounts.

But after they used the Galaxy Sand, none of them became a Viscount. That surprised Han Sen.

Dragon Lady said, “Galaxy Sand is powerful, but we have different elements. We have to refine it well for full-digestion, otherwise it will be hard to level up.”

The other three nodded and agreed with Dragon Lady. They were in a similar predicament as her, too.

Han Sen ate one himself, then. The Galaxy Sand dissolved into a liquid inside his body. The power streamed through this body like a river.

Han Sen quickly cast The Story of Genes to absorb the power of the Galaxy Sand.

The Story of Genes was really compatible. Han Sen had no trouble connecting with different elements, so he was able to use the energy quite effectively.

Galaxy Sand was powerful, and it took Han Sen a few hours to completely refine the energy he was bestowed. It was difficult to refine it all. Han Sen gave Little Silver a grain of Galaxy Sand next, but he was already a Viscount. It didn't work well on him, but it did provide him a lot of power to refine slowly.

Luckily, Little Star was a xenogeneic. If anybody asked where it came from, Han Sen could just say it was from Planet Eclipse.

The tale might seem unlikely, but there were enough xenogeneics on Planet Eclipse that it would be difficult to prove if the tale was true or false.

Han Sen took the grains of Galaxy Sand back with him to the Alliance, and he began refining it one piece per day. He spent his leftover time learning geno arts and staying with his family.

Han Sen thought that due to the fact that there were so many grains of Galaxy Sand, with each one packing so much energy, the bounty would eventually bring his The Story of Genes up to Earl class. After refining half of the lode, though, there had yet to be a single sign of him leveling up again.

Han Sen was depressed, so he decided to feed Little Star a few more. Little Star ate ten of them, and eventually, it became an Earl.

“That is a staggering difference.” Han Sen felt depressed.

He knew Little Star's element was highly compatible with the Galaxy Sand, but it really was so much easier for Little Star to level up compared to him and The Story of Genes.

Han Sen refined the rest of the Galaxy Sand himself, and when he was done, he felt himself teetering on the brink of leveling up. But even so, he couldn't get that last push to nudge him into Earl class.

“So many pieces of Galaxy Sand. If I had given them all to Little Star, it might have become a Marquise.”

Han Sen felt bad about his decision, but it was not as if he had anything better to do. The days he spent holding his daughter and kissing his wife were great, and Han Sen didn't worry too much about things he couldn't change. Yisha sent a message to his base, asking for Han Sen to meet her on Planet Blade.

When Han Sen was standing in front of Yisha, she saw that Han Sen had recovered his human form. She looked startled.

“Since when have you been a human again?” Yisha asked Han Sen.

“I practiced The Story of Genes every day. Within two months, I was back in a human state. Unfortunately, I feared there might be some side effects. So, I planned to practice for a while longer to make sure I wouldn't turn back into an ant or something before telling you.” Han Sen had already prepped this speech beforehand.

Yisha nodded and said, “I hatched a plan for fixing this, but since you are already healed, I guess there is no need for it. Don't go around telling everybody you are healed, though. And don't go drawing any unnecessary attention.”

Yes,” Han Sen said quickly.

After a moment of silence, Yisha went on to say, “There are too many spies on Planet Eclipse. Don't go back just yet. I will send you to Sky Palace for the time being, and you can study there.”

“Sky Palace?” Han Sen was surprised.

Han Sen had heard this name before. When the crazy crystallizer opened the gate of the Sanctuaries, Han Sen met a man who said he owned the throne of Sky Palace.

And Littleflower was almost taken by that man. Luckily, Han Sen was able to get away in time.

Yisha said, “Sky Palace’s leader is a deified elite. He has a deep connection with my elder. I used to practice in Sky Palace, as well. In essence, half of what I was taught came from him. I have already informed him of your arrival, and so he will assuredly take care of you.”

“But Queen, I want to study where you are near.” Han Sen looked sincere as he stared at Yisha.

The leader of Sky Palace had seen Han Sen before. If he was recognized, things could go bad very quickly ‘You are going there tomorrow.’ Yisha obviously wasn’t interested in a debate.

Chapter 1961 - Sky Palace

Chapter 1961 Sky Palace

Han Sen had to go to Sky Palace, so he told Xie Qing King and the others. They were to take care of Planet Eclipse for him in the meantime, and they discussed plans for the future.

Han Sen was not worried about how Planet Eclipse would fare, nor Xie Qing King. As long as Han Sen's identity was not exposed, Yisha would also be there to safeguard the planet. No harm should come to Xie Qing King and the others while he was gone.

Han Sen was scared of people recognizing him in Sky Palace. If he was found out, all sorts of trouble could come.

The next morning, Xie Qing King called for a ship and had Han Sen shuttled off to Sky Palace in secret.

Sky Palace had many requirements for entry, so only proper students were allowed to enter the place. Han Sen was allowed in only because of his association with Yisha. None of his companions were, however.

On the way there, Han Sen found himself stricken with boredom. He watched Bubble jump up and down for a while.

The creature was an optimistic thing, and it never appeared worried.

Aside from Bubble, Han Sen even had to leave behind Little Invisible. Without explicit permission, you were not allowed to bring anything else. If he was found out to have smuggled something in, he'd be a dead man.

With a deified elite there, Han Sen wouldn't make the smallest move out of line.

Sky Palace was far away from Narrow Moon. It took him an entire month to reach his destination, despite taking multiple hyperspace jumps.

Sky Palace was a massive xenogeneic space. The ship Yisha sent had no permission to land, so it came to a stop at a planet nearby. After they confirmed Han Sen's identity, they sent another ship for Han Sen to travel in on.

When Han Sen entered Sky Palace, he found many islands floating in the air. It was just sky everywhere he looked. The islands went on and on, both above and below him. How many there were in total, he could not guess.

Sky Palace must have been notified of his arrival. When Han Sen entered, a man rode towards him atop a big white bird.

"Are you Han Sen?" the man asked, bowing. He was very clean, and he looked like someone in their early twenties. The image, however, was marred by a wound on his forehead.

Or at least, Han Sen thought it was a small wound. Upon closer inspection, he realized it was a third eye.

"My name is Han Sen; what is your name?" Han Sen replied with a bow.

"My name is Thousand Feather Crane, and I am a student of one of the elders here. I have been sent here by my master to guide you along the Sky Road."

"Sky Road? I thought we were going to Sky Palace," Han Sen asked, confused.

Thousand Feather Crane did not appear to be in a rush, and so he said, "The first master made a rule. Any non-student that comes here must traverse the Sky Road alone. If you cannot travel through it, then that means you are not the heir of a deified. In that case, you will be shut out. Please forgive me."

"I see. Please lead the way, then." Han Sen was happy.

Han Sen did not want to enter Sky Palace. If there was a rule like this, in which he had to traverse the Sky Road, he could deliberately fail the test. Then he could go home.

“Please.” Thousand Feather Crane performed a gesture, and the white bird lowered its head.

Han Sen climbed on its back, and then Thousand Feather Crane commanded that it fly. It rose towards the closest floating isle they could see. As the bird took them there, Han Sen asked Thousand Feather Crane for more information concerning the Sky Road.

Sky Palace had many floating islands, and not even a student such as himself could guess the sheer number of them. The most famous one wasn't the one where the leaders resided, though. It was actually the one beginners visited. It was called Sky Door Island.

Sky Door Island was not very big. It was only a kilometer in length, and about a dozen meters wide. There were only a door and a stone path.

Anyone who came to this xenogeneic space—deified elites included—had to go to that island. They had to take the stone steps, unless they wished to be treated as an enemy.

Sky Door Island did not have anything special. The door and the stairs were ordinary. It was something that possessed a meaning under-the-hood, more than anything.

But when you walked past all the stairs, you would reach the Sky Road.

The Sky Door Island's steps were right across the main island. Between the two islands, there was a giant gourd vine which made up the road.

If you wanted to enter Sky Palace, you had to go past the vine and reach the island. If you fell, it meant you weren't qualified.

“Brother Thousand Feathers, what is so special about this gourd vine?” Han Sen asked with curiosity when he saw Sky Door Island.

Thousand Feather Crane smiled and said, “Don’t worry. The Sky Road is not dependent on your strength. If it is your destiny to do so, an ordinary person or creature that has not yet generated a geno armor can reach that island. You are a student of Knife Queen, so you must have some sort of destiny. You must be able to reach the main island.”

Han Sen wished to ask more, but the bird was directly in front of Sky Door Island now. It landed in front of a door that had been built from stone.

“Brother Han, please.” Thousand Feather Crane gestured towards the door.

Han Sen got off the bird and went atop the stone platform. When he looked up, there were a thousand steps trailing off into the sky. At the end of the stairs was the green vines looked like a dragon perched amidst the clouds.

Many green gourds were hanging on the vine. Some were as big as buildings, whereas others were as small as a fingertip. They were all green.

After Han Sen said his thanks to Thousand Feather Crane, he went through the door and began his ascent of the steps. He was headed for the gourd vine.

And just as he was told, the stone stairs presented nothing special. It wasn’t much later when Han Sen reached the end. The big gourd vine was in front of him. It was wide enough to allow a carriage to go along it.

“How can you fall off of this vine? There must be some other force at work here, but whatever it is, Thousand Feather Crane didn’t think to tell me,” Han Sen thought to himself.

Han Sen used his Dongxuan Aura to take a look. The gourd vine had the constancy of a machine. It somehow seemed more substantial than Clear Sea King, who was a King.

Han Sen was shocked. “Is this gourd, that’s scarier than a real dragon, greater than a King class elite?”

“Who cares? I’m not making it all the way across, anyway. If something goes wrong, I’ll just jump down.” Han Sen went towards the gourd vine, planning to lose the contest.

Chapter 1962 - Strange Reaction

Chapter 1962: Strange Reaction

On an island in Sky Palace, a middle-aged man in gray clothing watched the gourd vine.

“Father, what are you looking at?” A young lady walked up the middle-aged man in gray clothing and looked in the same direction.

“Knife Queen’s student is in Sky Palace. He is on the Sky Road now,” the middle-aged man in gray clothing said.

The lady lifted her lips and said, “What’s the big deal? Many heirs of Kings come to Sky Palace for practice. Having him here should have no bearing. Besides, he is just her student. It’s not as if he is her son.”

The middle-aged man smiled and said, “Knife Queen is the old man’s favorite student. She asked the old man for permission to allow her own student to come here for practice. The old man agreed without a moment of hesitation. If he can cross the Sky Road, the old man is going to give him a placement in the White Jade Building, no matter what.”

The lady’s eyes opened wide. “The old man has shown too much favoritism. We are the true students of Sky Palace, and we have to be in the top ten to attain a spot in the White Jade Building. He hasn’t done anything, and yet he earns a spot? That is not fair!”

The middle-aged man in gray clothing laughed. “There is no such thing as fair. The old man owns Sky Palace, so he is free to do that which makes him the happiest. Lady Su, keep in mind that everyone shares a different opinion on that which defines fairness. If you do not understand this, things may turn out poorly for you.”

The lady nodded. She seemed to understand, but not completely.

The lady quickly looked away. She smiled and said, "It does not matter how much the old man likes him; if he cannot cross Sky Road, it is useless to debate. Not everyone can cross the Sky Road, after all. He will soon see how difficult that crossing can be."

The middle-aged man in gray clothing smiled. "Lady Su, you are too naive. If Knife Queen sent him here, he has the confidence to make it through. Now we have to find out if he can trigger the holy presence from the holy gourd."

Lady Su felt glum, and she said, "The gourd rarely releases a holy aura for our proper students. What makes him think he can trigger it?"

"Back in the day, Knife Queen triggered the holy gourd's holy aura. She was an outsider at the time, too. She got a holy gourd knife air; if she hadn't, she wouldn't have achieved King class at such an early age. And then proceed to become half-deified so soon after. That gourd helped a lot," the middle-aged man in gray clothing said.

"Knife Queen is a real genius. Even the old man has said she may well become a deified being. I don't know about her student, though. I have heard he is a crystallizer, mind you. Kong Fei gave him a deified feather, and still no one dared to accept him. You can see how talented he is from that," Lady Su said, with a blinking of her eyes.

The middle-aged man in gray clothing shook his head. "They didn't refuse him because of a lack of talent. They refused him because of the instability of his genes. It is difficult to predict the future of a man like that. Whatever the case, it would be risking a grand investment."

"Let's see how talented he is, then," Lady Su said.

Han Sen glanced over the giant gourd vine that looked like a dragon. He stepped onto it, to reach the main green vine. But when he stepped onto it, he was shocked.

The gourd vine was fine, but the gourds started to shake. Each and every one of them. They were like vibrating dolls as they hung across the vines. It was quite spooky.

But aside from shaking, they did nothing else.

“No way! It looks very powerful, but that is surely just a bluff. If I fall down now, Yisha will kill me.” Han Sen thought about that, and decided to keep walking.

Everywhere he went, the gourds vibrated. If they were not connected to the vine, they would surely have flown away.

When Han Sen saw that they were doing nothing but shaking, he relaxed and kept walking across the vine. He thought to himself, “The Sky Road cannot be this simple, surely. There must be some special trick to it. Let’s walk forward and have a looksie.”

Han Sen kept walking across the gourd vine, while the people across Sky Palace were in shock.

Thousand Feather Crane looked towards Han Sen’s feet and saw the gourds vibrating like mad. His eyes almost popped out of their sockets.

He had been in Sky Palace for twenty years, and he had watched many creatures make the trip across the Sky Road. Some had passed over the vine without incident, some had been knocked off by an angered vine, and a select few had received approval by a holy gourd and been given a holy aura.

When Thousand Feather Crane crossed the Sky Road, he received a holy aura from a holy gourd. That in itself was a rare thing.

But he had never seen something like this transpire before. The gourds all looked scared of Han Sen, and they were shaking as if they wished to escape from him.

“What is it with this guy?” Thousand Feather Crane watched Han Sen cross over the holy gourds.

Lady Su and the middle-aged man in gray clothing saw this as well. It prompted Lady Su to ask, with much shock, “Father, what are these gourds doing? It doesn’t look as if they’re

giving out a holy aura. But I've never heard of the gourds reacting like this to the approach of someone."

The middle-aged man in gray clothing looked at the vine and said, "This is strange. The gourds have not approved his talent, but...they are scared of him."

"The gourds are scared of him? That is impossible! He is just a Viscount. The holy gourd is a deified plant. Even if a deified elite was making the crossing, it shouldn't be scared. He is just a Viscount," Lady Su said again, dripping with disbelief.

This shouldn't happen, but the gourds do look scared." The middle-aged man in gray clothing stroked his jaw and looked at Han Sen atop the gourd vine with interest.

In Sky Palace, many people were now focusing on Han Sen. Each and every person there had a strange expression.

Wherever he went, the gourds would shake with fear in a ten meter radius around him. When Han Sen went by, and they fell out of that radius, the gourds would revert to their still selves again.

While Han Sen was walking, nothing else happened aside from the shivering of the gourds. It actually made Han Sen depressed.

"D*mn it! Something please happen. I can't just jump off. If I go back now, Yisha will kill me." Han Sen's mind was racing for a solution.

But his minutes of furious thinking were futile. Before he knew it, he had walked to the other end of the gourd vine. He reached the stone steps on the main island, and the gourd had yet to have a response.

Chapter 1963 - Road to the Sky

Chapter 1963: Road to the Sky

“Strange. All the gourds showed a reaction, but they didn’t give out a holy aura. This is really strange.” Inside a building, a man of the Sky race frowned as he looked upon Han Sen traversing the Sky Road. He was in deep thought.

Everyone in Sky Palace showed a similar expression. They had never seen a holy gourd react that way, and so no one knew what it meant.

If Han Sen was talented, the holy gourd would provide him with a holy aura. His potential was yet to be determined. Wherever he went, the gourds did have a reaction, but it was one that yielded nothing. It was very peculiar.

Han Sen felt depressed. He thought he could go home by failing under spectacular circumstances, but the Sky Road was nothing special. It was like an ordinary bridge, really, except longer. It also went upwards.

Han Sen stepped onto the main island, and then Thousand Feather Crane rode his bird over towards him. Han Sen said to him, “That gourd vine only shakes. Is it supposed to spook people into falling off?”

Thousand Feather Crane looked at him strangely, and said, “Brother Han is talented. You have nothing to be afraid of. It is getting late, and the leader awaits you. Let us be off!”

Han Sen followed him via the steps. They went between a vast array of clouds, many of which had buildings situated upon them. It was like he was in heaven.

The jade stone steps were going up high. When Han Sen finally saw the end, he found himself looking at a grand palace. Ahead was a large plaque that said, “Sky Palace.”

Han Sen walked up the stairs, one step at a time. Every step he took felt heavier than the last. It was not that the stairs had some trick to them, it was just that the Sky Palace looked so intimidating. People below it would feel pressure going up.

It wasn't just a feeling, either. There was an increased weight upon his shoulders. The closer he got, the stronger it grew.

Thousand Feather Crane kept watch over Han Sen.

The staircase to Sky Palace was called the Road to the Sky. Those of the Sky race felt no particular sensation when they climbed the stairs, but the outsiders that traversed those stairs would feel a massive amount of pressure from Sky Palace. The pressure came from the plaque that said Sky Palace.

The plaque was crafted by the first leader of Sky Palace. It had the powers of Sky Palace Outer Sky. It suppressed all people. People with a poor will would be greatly suppressed, and they would not be able to reach Sky Palace.

Even people with strong wills would feel as if they were marching through hell when they walked that road. Most of them would feel exhausted as they climbed.

Thousand Feather Crane kept watching Han Sen, just in case he fell. If he did, Thousand Feather Crane would carry Han Sen to Sky Palace. It was his job to guide him there.

Han Sen had been invited by the Sky Palace leader. He had crossed the Sky Road, and so Thousand Feather Crane could not allow him to be crushed by the Road to the Sky. And it would look poorly if he ended up crawling in.

Not much later, he saw Han Sen frown. He paid more attention to Han Sen, ready to help him if he collapsed. The first leader of Sky Palace was powerful. A mere two words were enough to buckle most people's knees.

Normally, only Dukes could withstand the pressure and enter. Han Sen was just a Viscount, so it would not be embarrassing for him to be unable to keep his feet.

But only people who went through it the first time would suffer this pressure. They wouldn't feel it once they were past it, and that was what was most amazing about the Road to the Sky.

Han Sen frowned and kept ascending the stairs. His pace was ordinary, and there was no sign of him struggling. He looked at the plaque that read Sky Palace.

Han Sen could discern the feelings elicited by the words, and he understood how intimidating they were. It made him admire whoever had left the words there.

Han Sen did not fight back with his will. He had come there to practice, so he wasn't there to cause issues. And the leader was Yisha's teacher. He didn't want to embarrass himself, so he didn't fight it. He accepted the feelings the two words gave him.

Sky Palace feelings were strange. Han Sen felt as if he was getting crushed. It was getting harder and harder to walk, and his forehead eventually started to sweat.

Han Sen refused to fight against the feelings the words gave him, but it was still very difficult to bear with them. If Han Sen did not possess a great will of his own, he'd have been brought down to the ground and made immobile.

Thousand Feather Crane observed the beads of sweat on Han Sen, and noted how it looked as if the man had just stepped out of the water. He frowned.

They had only gone up one hundred steps, and yet, Han Sen sheened in sweat. It was pretty extreme.

He was a Viscount, so there was no way he'd last one thousand steps. But if Han Sen's situation continued like that, he might not even make it to the two hundredth step.

"Sky Palace is strong." Han Sen was shocked.

Han Sen did not use his own will to try to break Sky Palace's will, but it was obviously very powerful for it to suppress him like so. Han Sen did not know what to do.

Since Han Sen had decided not to fight back, he didn't plan on releasing the feeling. He accepted the pressure and just kept going. It was so heavy, it was like he was carrying a mountain. Every step he took left the stair behind him wet with sweat.

Han Sen kept feeling that pressure as he walked, and as he pushed on, he learned something.

It was a pure feeling, and it did not come from Han Sen. The intensity of the suppression began to give Han Sen some manner of inspiration.

The Dongxuan Aura's power could only mask his senses. It didn't affect his body.

If Dongxuan Aura could be suppressed like so, the power would reach another level.

As Han Sen kept walking, he loosened himself up. He allowed the pressure to fall on him fully. He hoped to learn something from those words.

It was getting harder and harder for Han Sen to walk. By the time he reached the two hundredth step, he had to spend a lot of power to take every step forward.

"Let me carry you." Thousand Feather Crane saw Han Sen on the verge of collapse, and so he resolved to help him.

Chapter 1964 - Whose Road to the Sky

Chapter 1964 Whose Road to the Sky

Han Sen was suffering beneath the Sky Palace text. He could not focus on anything else, and he did not hear what Thousand Feather Crane had said to him.

Thousand Feather Crane could see Han Sen suffering, though. And without thinking, he moved to grab hold of him. “Relax, it is okay.” Thousand Feather Crane smiled as he helped Han Sen.

The feelings around Sky Palace were strong, but Thousand Feather Crane possessed the blood of the Sky. He was born there, and he was immune to that power. He held Han Sen with ease, because he felt nothing. It’d be so light, even if Han Sen was getting crushed.

Thousand Feather Crane saw that Han Sen was continuing to walk forward, and so gave him his own arm to hold and support him. If he fell, Thousand Feather Crane would use his own strength.

Although Han Sen looked to be weary and in pain, he still managed to cross the five-hundred step milestone. But after that, his body could no longer endure the force. It bent his back.

Thousand Feather Crane pulled his arm upwards to help Han Sen stand straighten. But when he used strength to lift Han Sen, he felt as if the man’s weight was like that of a large boulder. He had to use a great deal of force to get Han Sen to stand straight.

“Relax; don’t use strength. This is an illusion, and there is no actual pressure coming down on you.” Thousand Feather Crane thought Han Sen was using strength because he was holding him.

Han Sen did not hear what he said. The scary feelings continued to pound down into his body, making him feel as if he was carrying a mountain. He had to focus.

Thousand Feather Crane held onto Han Sen as he ascended. The weight on Thousand Feather Crane's arms felt heavier and heavier, and he thought, "This guy's will is so weak. He is getting crushed, and he is using too much strength."

After a while, Han Sen seemed too heavy for Thousand Feather Crane to keep him upright. He looked at Han Sen's body and noticed he wasn't running any energy, and he wasn't using up any of his own strength.

"Weird; he hasn't cast anything. Why is he so heavy? Sky Palace should just apply mental pressure, and nothing physical." Thousand Feather Crane thought about it, but he couldn't figure out what was going on. So, he continued helping Han Sen.

Han Sen's body was getting heavier and heavier. Thousand Feather Crane had only used one arm to begin with, but now he was forced to use two. On top of that, it was getting extremely difficult.

"Hey, are you okay?" Thousand Feather Crane looked at Han Sen and frowned. Han Sen was looking very red, and his clothes were drenched in sweat. His breathing had become very hoarse, as if he was beginning to suffocate.

Han Sen's eyeballs were bulging in their sockets, with blood vessels popping. It was like his entire body was really going to be crushed.

Han Sen hadn't expected that when he let the feelings imbued by the text enter his body, it would be this scary. Now, he could only use his will to prevent himself from being crushed. Walking on his own really was impossible, at this point. After one thousand steps, he was being carried by Thousand Feather Crane.

Thousand Feather Crane had no clue what was going on. The feelings of Sky Palace were powerful, but they should not have been that strong.

He didn't realize that Han Sen had asked for this. Instead of fighting the feelings, he practically invited them into his body. No one had ever done something that crazy before, so it was an entirely unexpected event. When Thousand Feather Crane realized what had happened, he didn't know how things would progress from there.

Han Sen had slowed to a stop, and he didn't seem to be awake. Thousand Feather Crane carried Han Sen. Lifting Han Sen put an enormous strain on his arms, requiring all of his strength. Quickly, his arms became completely exhausted. He couldn't hold Han Sen off the ground.

Thousand Feather Crane gritted his teeth and set Han Sen down. He moved in front of Han Sen, then used Han Sen's arm to pull the young man onto his back.

After Thousand Feather Crane lifted Han Sen onto his back, he continued walking towards Sky Palace.

"Knife Queen's student is strange. He had reached such a dire state just walking on the Road to the Sky." Thousand Feather Crane felt depressed, but he still carried Han Sen.

The old man in Sky Palace was waiting for Han Sen, so he couldn't just leave him behind and keep going by himself.

Thousand Feather Crane hurried up the pace at which he was carrying Han Sen, but after a while, he slowed down again. It was not like he wanted to be slow; it was just because Han Sen was as heavy as a small mountain. He couldn't walk fast.

The higher he went, the heavier Han Sen became. Thousand Feather Crane's forehead was beading with sweat.

"Is this his Road to the Sky? Or is it my Road to the Sky?" Thousand Feather Crane continued carrying Han Sen, and before long, he was sweating all over.

After nine thousand steps, Thousand Feather Crane was all red. The sweat had soaked his clothing, and the prettiness of his face had vanished. He was gasping roughly for air.

“I can’t believe he is this heavy. No way he can unleash this sort of power, if he is indeed just a Viscount. He doesn’t even have an energy flow. Where is this magic coming from? Is it because of the feelings issued by the Sky Palace text?”

Thousand Feather Crane pondered as he walked on.

Thousand Feather Crane was an Earl. He could have carried a dragon, and walked up each and every step without so much as getting out of breath.

But now, veins were bulging across his arms and legs. He was exhausting all his strength in this walk. He was breathing so heavily, it looked as if he was going to breathe fire. Boom!

A white cloud poured out of Thousand Feather Crane, like steam stemming from his pores. The white smoke then condensed, swirling closely around Thousand Feather Crane’s body.

Thousand Feather Crane could no longer keep going with physical strength alone, so he was using his cloud powers.

Han Sen’s situation was worse than Thousand Feather Crane’s, though. Something inside his body had been crushed. His bones and flesh were collapsing, making him look like an anorexic patient. The parts of him that had meat were caved in, and his bones groaned amidst it. They were going to break.

One step, one stair. Ten steps brought blood and sweat. Thousand Feather Crane, seeing things were almost over, felt his legs shaking violently.

He tried his hardest, but the final few steps were taking up all his strength. He almost fell down right in front of the gate. He used all his strength to push through it and carry Han Sen through the gates.

After entering, Thousand Feather Crane felt light again. He almost moaned in pleasure. He felt relieved, and he said, “Finally, we are here!”

On the steps between the clouds, no one had seen what was going on. But when Thousand Feather Crane walked in, the people saw he had carried Han Sen. And they were all given a shock.

For as long as Sky Palace had existed, no one had been carried like that before.

Chapter 1965 - White Jade Jing

Chapter 1965 White Jade Jing

Han Sen had walked the sky jade steps, and everyone knew Thousand Feather Crane had to carry him into Sky Palace.

This was far too weird, though. Han Sen had almost passed out when he was brought inside. Thousand Feather Crane continued carrying him until they reached the leader of Sky Palace.

Han Sen was drifting in and out of consciousness. He couldn't see what the leader of Sky Palace looked like, but he was brought back out by Thousand Feather Crane.

Something this strange had never happened before, so there was much discussion surrounding the event.

“This must be the first time the old man has met with someone that was carried in. I heard his own beard bent in surprise.”

“How could he walk the Road to the Sky like that? That guy's unique.”

“Or more like creepy. Haha!”

“No matter how creepy he is, the old man still accepted him. He still managed to obtain a placement in White Jade Building. He is lucky to be Knife Queen's student.”

“Yeah. The old man respects Knife Queen, and she is really good. The old man really does treat her like a proper student. It does seem weird that she would take on a student as strange as the one she did.”

Han Sen slept for twenty-four hours straight. After that, he was fully recovered. The feelings of suppression had finally faded.

After waking, he found himself lying on a jade bed. The room had nothing, in terms of decor. It was a stone house with a jade bed, a stone table, and four stone stools.

Han Sen stretched and felt pretty good. Letting those harsh feelings into his body had been an excruciating thing to suffer, but it hadn't been in vain. Han Sen hadn't been able to figure out how to make his Dongxuan Aura into something solid, but he still learned something important from accepting that feeling.

When Han Sen was suppressed by the Jade Turtle Spell, the Dongxuan Aura had simulated the workings of the technique. That was how he was able to tear the spell off.

Since then, Han Sen had frequently played with the spell. He used Dongxuan Aura to study it, but the spell's power was very complicated. It was difficult for him to learn its workings, and he made little progress.

But when Sky Palace entered his body while he was on the stairs, he felt there was something in common with Jade Turtle Spell.

Sky Palace only imbued a feeling without applying anything solid, and Jade Turtle Spell's energy flow was too hard to understand completely. When they were both compared, however, the comparison opened Han Sen's mind. He felt happy.

As he learned more, he noticed it had things in common with Coin, too. By continuing to examine the skills, he was able to learn a lot more.

While he could still feel the wisps of that suppression, Han Sen pulled out Jade Turtle Spell and used Dongxuan Aura to dive in. He tried to learn something from the spell, so he could confirm his theories.

Han Sen sat on the jade bed as he looked over the Jade Turtle Spell. But he quickly found that the Jade Turtle Spell behaved as if it had grown weaker. It used to be like jade, but now it was like rock.

Two days later, the Jade Turtle Spell suddenly cracked and became dust. It had become useless.

Han Sen was shocked, but he was happy about this. He had learned a lot.

Han Sen had disappeared for a few days, and rumors were floating around the palace. People believed Han Sen had been in a mini-coma for days, and that he had incurred serious injuries. He had only been there for a few days, and he hadn't met many people at all. Yet despite that, he had become quite famous.

Many of the students in Sky Palace were curious. They wanted to know what sort of person Han Sen was.

Han Sen exited his stone house and noticed that he was standing on a floating island. It was more like a large rock than an island, though. Outside of the house, the ground around him was only about half the size of a baseball field.

On that small island, there was a crooked tree. Han Sen did not know what type of tree it was, but it looked half-dead, and it was covered in scorch marks. Its leaves were all yellow, and it looked ready to fall down at any given moment.

Han Sen looked around. The island was small, but it was very close to the primary isle. It was one of the closest islands to the main island, actually.

Han Sen looked around, and then he heard a bird. An elegant man riding a big white bird flew down and landed on the island.

"Thank you for carrying me into Sky Palace," Han Sen said with genuine gratitude.

Han Sen was focused on the feelings of oppression, but he still remembered being carried into Sky Palace. If he hadn't received that aid, he would have been crushed on the stairs.

Thousand Feather Crane shook his head and said, "Bringing you to Sky Palace was my duty. There is no need to thank me."

After that, Thousand Feather Crane brought out a tablet for Han Sen and said, “This is a Sky Palace identity tablet. It will show others the level of authority and access you have within Sky Palace. Make sure you don’t lose it! If you lose it, you will have to go to Clear Hall. If you don’t, you will be punished.”

“Sky Torture Peak has a tablet with rules inscribed upon it. You should go and take a look, just so you don’t end up unknowingly breaking the rules,” Thousand Feather Crane said.

“Thanks, Thousand Feather. Can I meet the palace leader now?” Han Sen put away the tablet.

“The leader has already seen you; there is no need for you to see him. He has given you permission to go to the White Jade Jing. Your identity tablet will allow you to practice there. It will help you.”

“Where is White Jade Jing?” Han Sen asked.

Thousand Feather Crane pointed at Han Sen’s identity tablet. “White Jade Jing has twelve floors and five cities. If the angels there touch my head, my hair will grow. White Jade Jing is a place for practicing. Simply being given permission to go there is a high honor. You will have to practice hard there, and not waste this glorious opportunity.” Thousand Feather Crane hopped onto his white bird to leave.

“Thousand Feather, where are you going?” Han Sen quickly asked.

“I am going to practice in White Jade Jing!” Thousand Feather Crane answered.

“Great! I don’t know the way there. Could you please take me?” Han Sen said, as he quickly hopped onto the bird.

Thousand Feather Crane looked depressed, but he did not say anything. He flew the big white bird to one of the floating islands.

“Sky Palace is great. If this was in the Alliance, this would make a grand place for tourists.” Han Sen saw so many strange scenes and heavenly-looking buildings.

Chapter 1966 - Jade Air

Chapter 1966 Jade Air

Open air extended as far as Han Sen could see both above and below Sky Palace. The islands floated together in the midst of a seemingly endless sea of sky.

Han Sen sat on Thousand Feather Crane's bird and admired the view. After one hour of travel, the snow-white bird descended on one island in particular. The island was situated between the clouds, so their vision was a little hindered. What could be seen clearly, however, were the twelve jade towers rising amidst the clouds.

The snow-white bird landed on the island, and Thousand Feather Crane and Han Sen dismounted. He noticed the whole island was composed of jade, but it didn't look manmade.

Thousand Feather Crane headed towards the White Jade Building. When Han Sen looked over there, he saw it glisten. He had barely been able to see the twelve White Jade Buildings from the air. When he was standing on the island, all he could see was one of them in front of him. The other eleven were nowhere to be seen.

Each White Jade Building consisted of seven floors. From where he was standing, he could see that the crystal constructs were protected by light. Just like the island, the jade did not look man-made. It was as if it had been born like that.

"Thousand Feather, who created the White Jade Building?" Han Sen asked as he walked.

Thousand Feather Crane answered, "White Jade Jing has twelve buildings and five cities. It existed long before the xenogeneic space was first discovered. They grew here naturally, instead of being built by people like you and me."

"This is amazing." Han Sen was interested in White Jade Jing.

They both came before the building. There were no guards around. Thousand Feather Crane pushed the door open and walked inside.

Han Sen was disappointed, and he said, "I thought that White Jade Jing is a place not many are allowed access to. Why are there no guards? Anyone could walk right in."

Thousand Feather Crane coldly said, "Didn't you see the two jade beasts outside the door? You can come in because you have a tablet. If you didn't have it, you'd have already been eaten alive by now. If you don't have the tablet, you cannot access this place."

"I see." Now Han Sen remembered the pair of three-meter-tall jade beasts. They looked like kirin, with one standing at each side of the building. He thought they were dead, but they were actually alive.

Thousand Feather Crane did not say anything more, and just kept on walking.

Han Sen was checking out the building, but there was nothing to see on the inside. There were just a few steps leading up to the second floor.

Han Sen, seeing Thousand Feather Crane ascend the flight of stairs, followed.

The second floor was the same as the last; it was empty. There was only another staircase that led up to the third floor. Han Sen thought this was strange, and so he asked, "Why is there nothing inside this building? What are the benefits to practicing here?"

Thousand Feather Crane approached the next flight of stairs and said, "It is not time for White Jade Jing to open yet. That is why there is nothing here. White Jade Tower has seven floors. The higher you go, the more Jade Air you can receive. You are a Viscount, so practicing on the third floor should be good. If you can take the Jade Air here, you can go up higher."

After that, Thousand Feather Crane went up to the third floor. Han Sen followed.

On the third floor, there was finally something to see. A few young Sky people were sitting. No one spoke and no one talked.

The few young ones, when seeing Thousand Feather Crane, stood up and said, "Greetings, Uncle Crane."

Thousand Feather Crane nodded and proceeded up to the fourth floor.

The young ones looked at Han Sen curiously, as if he was a stranger. They did not know if he was the student of Knife Queen that had just entered.

One of them did know Han Sen, however. It was Lady Su with the middle-aged man in gray clothing. Her full name was Yun Suyi. Lady Su was what her family called her.

Yun Suyi's eyes smiled like a moon. She sat in the corner, looked at Han Sen, and thought, "How dare he come here? He must be the first person who had to be carried into Sky Palace."

The other Skys were interested in Han Sen, as not many outsiders were allowed to enter White Jade Jing. And they hadn't heard of any that had received permission after being carried in.

A young man walked in front of Han Sen and said, "My name is Yun Fei; I am a student of one of the nine seats. Which are you from?"

"I am not a student of Sky Palace. My teacher is Knife Queen," Han Sen said.

"You are Han Sen? The one who got dragged here?" Yun Fei shouted in shock.

The other people stared at Han Sen as if he was an animal from the zoo.

Yes, I am that same Han Sen." Han Sen shrugged. He didn't really care what they thought of him.

"Bro, you are awesome. Ever since the Sky claimed this place, you are the first person to get carried in. How did you do that?" Yun Fei laughed as he patted Han Sen on the shoulder.

“That was an accident, I’m afraid. There is no need to be jealous.” Han Sen laughed.

Yun Fei and the other Sky could see Han Sen had a mild temper and was willing to joke around, so they chatted for a while.

Only the elites of the Sky were permitted access to White Jade Jing. There was no conflict amongst them, so they chatted happily with each other.

Yun Suyi merely watched, however. She did not participate. Seeing Han Sen talk with them, she thought to herself, “He seems nice, but his will is weak. Why would Knife Queen be willing to accept a student such as this? He is not even one of the Rebate.”

After talking for a while, Yun Fei suddenly said, “Time’s up. Talk later.”

After that, everyone found themselves a place to sit down.

Han Sen knew White Jade Jing was going to open, so he found a place to sit down as well.

The jade tower had no dust. The floor that was made from jade was smooth and cool. Han Sen felt a cool air enter his body as he sat.

As the cold air curled around Han Sen, the jade stone in the center of the floor began to emit white smoke. That white smoke expanded through the room, glittering as it went. It filled every inch of the air. Everyone cast their powers to absorb the smoke from the jade, creating small vortexes around them.

Han Sen had asked them about White Jade Tower while they were chatting, so he knew that he was supposed to use his geno art to absorb the Jade Air.

Suddenly, Han Sen felt a chill energy penetrate his body.

Chapter 1967 - Absorbing Jade Air

Chapter 1967 Absorbing Jade Air

The feeling was amazing. It was like many small ice cubes were melting around him. They melted when they touched his skin, and were then absorbed.

As the Jade Air was absorbed into his cells, Han Sen noticed some changes that were happening across his body. His skin was developing a jade-like color. Under the influence of the Jade Air, Yun Fei and the others were all shining like crystals. They were like statues built from jade.

“This powerful Jade Air can change the genes of the body? This Jade Air must come from a xenogeneic gene, yes?” Han Sen thought to himself.

“Left Crazy did say that rocks possessed sentience, but their lives are different from ours. White Jade Jing must be a creature, and the Jade Air must be a xenogeneic gene. That being said, I can’t determine the level of White Jade Jing.” Han Sen made a number of guesses while he absorbed the Jade Air.

But guessing was all he could do since his theories stemmed from what Left Crazy had once told him. No one could prove if what he was thinking was the truth.

Han Sen used The Story of Genes to absorb the Jade Air, transforming the Jade Air’s energy.

The Story of Genes was very compatible when it came to other elements. After absorbing Jade Air, there was a noticeable improvement. But it still wasn’t enough to break through, and there was obviously something missing.

“Didn’t Thousand Feather Crane say that the higher you get, the stronger the Jade Air is? Maybe I can use a stronger Jade Air to breakthrough,” Han Sen thought, standing up. He walked towards the fourth floor, with the Jade Air all around.

The third floor, with its Jade Air, offered too little for him. Everyone there was a Viscount, but Han Sen had used many xenogeneic genes to improve his body. He was much stronger than the average Viscount.

Han Sen could compete with Earls if he maxed out his genes as a Viscount.

When he stepped onto the fourth floor, he felt very cold. The third floor felt cool, but the fourth felt cold. After going in, he felt as if he had stumbled into an ice cave.

But that cold could not affect Han Sen’s body. He looked around the fourth floor and saw some people sitting amidst swirls of Jade Air. Aside from the Sky, there were two outsider races. Thousand Feather Crane was not on this floor, however.

Han Sen absorbed the Jade Air to help breakthrough with The Story of Genes, but it wasn’t working. So, he decided to walk to the fifth floor.

When he reached the fifth floor, he felt as if he had been frozen. He stopped at the entrance and became like a real statue.

The Jadeskin melted from ice to water, and with Han Sen’s strength, he could not refine that Jade Air. The Jade Air started to fill his body. Han Sen felt his body go cold. It was not his temperature decreasing, either; it was his life that was weakening.

Han Sen could feel his body turning into jade, growing weaker. He cast The Story of Genes, but he could not withstand the jade.

The Jade Air’s gene power was far stronger than Han Sen’s gene power. So, the genes in his body were being changed by the Jade Air.

Han Sen was surprised. In the space of one floor, there had been a massive difference. His power was sufficient to counter the Jade Air, but that would nullify the point of practicing there.

Han Sen cast Petrify and turned himself to stone. When the Jade Air tried to invade the stone, it could not invade the genes of Han Sen's body. It moisturized Han Sen's petrified body, making itself much easier for him to absorb.

When using Petrify, the only other skill Han Sen could activate was The Story of Genes. So, without hesitating, he activated The Story of Genes to absorb the Jade Air around him.

The Jade Air was absorbed by his petrified body. He continued running The Story of Genes, and as he did so, his petrified body turned to jade.

The powerful Jade Air kept trying to break through and send him up to Earl class. But again and again, something held him back and made the process fail. The air was very powerful, but for some reason, it couldn't carry him through to the last stage.

After two hours, the Jade Air disappeared. And when it was gone, Han Sen stopped using Petrify. He felt awful.

"Such powerful Jade Air, and it still isn't enough to break through with The Story of Genes? What do I have to do to become an Earl?" Han Sen felt depressed.

The people on the fifth floor saw a stranger—they were looking at Han Sen. They noticed he was not of the Sky, and that was even weirder.

Those people did not know who Han Sen was, and they did not expect a Viscount could accompany them on the fifth floor when the Jade Air erupted. So, they guessed Han Sen was an Earl.

Han Sen did not stay and talk to them, and he went straight up to the sixth floor. He had Petrify, so the Jade Air could not damage him.

“If the fifth floor’s Jade Air cannot help me break through, I will have to keep going.” Han Sen walked to the sixth floor.

More people were practicing there.

It was not the time for Jade Air to erupt there, but no one noticed Han Sen. Han Sen looked around the sixth floor, and again he could not see Thousand Feather Crane. So, he went ahead to the seventh floor.

Han Sen found him there on the seventh floor. And on the seventh floor, aside from Han Sen himself, there were three people in total.

Two of them were of the Sky, and one of them was bald. He had nine moles on his head, so he was from the Buddha. He looked young, like Speechless. So, it must have been hard to reach this point at the age he was. He was the best of the Earls, as most Earls could go no further than the fifth floor.

Of the two Sky, one of them was Thousand Feather Crane. The other Sky was a young woman that Han Sen did not know.

Han Sen looked at them, and they looked at Han Sen.

“Brother Han, why are you not practicing down there? Why have you come here?” Thousand Feather Crane asked. Before Han Sen could answer, the young Sky woman looked at Han Sen and said, “You are Knife Queen’s student Han

Han Sen saw how scared she looked, and he knew what she would soon say. He smiled and told her, “Yes. I am Han Sen, who was brought in by Thousand Feather Crane.”

Chapter 1968 - The Seventh Floor

Chapter 1968 The Seventh Floor

The woman heard him and smiled. "You are very funny. My name is Yun Sushang. I am a student of the Tenth Elder. You can call me Senior."

"Greetings, Senior Yun," Han Sen said, suddenly feeling like he was back in school. It was actually a nice feeling.

Yun Sushang pointed at the Buddha man and said, "His name is First Day. The Buddha sent him here to study in Sky Palace, just like you."

"Amitabha! Greetings, Mister Han." First Day bowed before Han Sen.

Han Sen did not like the Buddha, but he didn't think that every single one of them was a bad person. He didn't know First Day, though, so he had no immediate reason to hate the man. That being said, he still wanted to avoid being First Day's friend. After the introductions, Han Sen turned to Thousand Feather Crane.

"Thousand Feather, I thought you said there were twelve White Jade Buildings. But I have only seen this one." If Han Sen couldn't achieve a breakthrough on the seventh floor, he thought that he might need a place with an even stronger Jade Air.

"There are twelve buildings and five cities in White Jade Jing. Most people only see the twelve White Jade Buildings, not the five cities. Consequently, they can only enter this one place. If you wish to enter the others, you must first understand the other towers," Thousand Feather Crane said.

"What is there to learn?" Han Sen asked.

“I don’t know. It’s just something you have to learn. It’s hard for me to explain. But I think you should practice on the third or fourth floor. You can start thinking about moving on when you reach the fifth or sixth floor,” Thousand Feather Crane said.

Han Sen wished to say something, but someone suddenly entered the seventh floor. It was Yun Suyi. They had met on the third floor.

Yun Suyi, upon seeing Han Sen, was shocked. When the Jade Air passed, Han Sen had vanished. She had believed that he had been unable to withstand it, and so he decided to leave. She didn’t expect that Han Sen had already gone to the top, looking for Thousand Feather Crane.

“Suyi, let me introduce you. This is Knife Queen’s student Han Sen.” Yun Sushang pulled Yun Suyi near and smiled.

“I met him already, down below,” Yun Suyi answered.

Yun Suyi and Yun Sushang were sisters. They were the heirs of the Tenth Elder. Yun Suyi had blood, while Yun Sushang was a step-daughter. Yun Sushang was the Seventh Elder’s daughter, but he had died. Yun Sushang was taken in by Yun Suyi’s father while she was still young.

Thousand Feather Crane was also a student of the Tenth Elder, so he was close with the Yun sisters.

The sisters had a good relationship, as fine as any real siblings. Since they had a little while before White Jade Jing opened again, Yun Suyi had come to talk to Yun Sushang and kill some time.

Han Sen asked Thousand Feather Crane, “Thousand Feather, I’m curious about the Jade Air of the other twelve buildings. Are they stronger?”

Before he could answer, Yun Suyi said, “They’re not just stronger. They have spirit. If you’re not an Earl at least, you’ll die there. Don’t even think about going elsewhere. Just stay here and practice.”

“So if I become an Earl, I can go to the other twelve buildings?” Han Sen asked.

“You have to understand the knowledge of the White Jade Buildings. Only then can you see the other buildings behind this one,” Yun Suyi said.

“Thousand Feather Crane, Yun Sushang, and First Day are the best of the Earls. Can they not understand this knowledge?” Han Sen thought to himself. He knew it was something he shouldn’t say out loud.

Yun Suyi knew what Han Sen was thinking, however. She smiled. “Brother Crane and my sister already understand. Many people on the sixth floor already understand, too. But of the twelve buildings, this first one is the most tamed. The Jade Air here is the easiest to refine, so it is best to stay here until you are a Marquise.”

Upon hearing this, Han Sen frowned in thought. “If the Jade Air here is considered mild, how scary must the Jade Air be in the other buildings? If I can’t break through here, maybe I can go to the other White Jade Buildings. I just don’t know what I need to understand about these constructs.”

After talking for a while, Yun Sushang suddenly noticed the time. Then, she spoke to Yun Suyi. “The Jade Air is going to erupt. Go back now. We will speak later when this is done.”

Yun Suyi nodded and headed for the stairs. Han Sen was still talking to Thousand Feather Crane, so she said, “You should come. When the Jade Air arrives, you will become a jade statue before you have a chance to return to the third floor.”

“Brother Han, head on down. We will talk later,” Thousand Feather Crane said.

“I’m not going back. I want to practice here,” Han Sen said.

Yun Suyi and the others all looked at Han Sen. Yun Suyi found herself both angry and amused. “Even most Earls do not dare come to the seventh floor. Only my sister and Brother Crane, who are both so talented and stronger than the average Earl, dare to practice here. Did you not see the swathe of Earls down on the sixth floor? They don’t dare come up. What do you think a Viscount can do here? Do you want to become a statue?”

“Brother Han, you should go downstairs. You have to do this floor-by-floor,” Thousand Feather Crane said.

Han Sen laughed and said, “My skills have maxed out! I need the seventh floor’s Jade Air to break through. Don’t worry;

I can fight against the Jade Air here. I’ll be fine.”

Yun Suyi started to say something else, but Yun Sushang cut her off. “Suyi, go now. The Jade Air will soon erupt, and it’ll be too late for you to leave when it does.”

Yun Suyi left the seventh floor and paced quickly down the stairs. She kept looking back, but she did not see Han Sen following after her.

“This guy isn’t strong, but he is ambitious. Brother Crane will have to carry him down, again,” Yun Suyi thought to herself.

Thousand Feather Crane and Yun Sushang tried to convince Han Sen, but they were not really friends. If Han Sen wanted to stay that much, they weren’t going to plead against the idea.

Thousand Feather Crane smiled wryly and shook his head. If Han Sen could not withstand the force, then he would carry him down. He could not allow the Jade Air to turn Han Sen into a statue and kill him.

Han Sen found a spot that was closer to Thousand Feather Crane. First Day looked at Han Sen curiously, and Han Sen shot him a smile. First Day looked shy, and then turned away.

“This First Day Buddha is interesting. He is so young and so strong. He might be as good as Seven Spirit. His mind is still like a kid’s, though,” Han Sen thought. Then, the jade walls began to emit a Jade Air.

Chapter 1969 - Becoming an Earl

Chapter 1969 Becoming an Earl

The seventh floor's Jade Air flowed out like a liquid. It hung visibly in the air.

Han Sen used Petrify to turn his flesh into stone, so he didn't feel it very much when the Jade Air connected with his body. He used The Story of Genes to absorb the Jade Air.

Thousand Feather Crane, Yun Sushang, and First Day all turned to look at Han Sen. The average Earl couldn't withstand the seventh floor's Jade Air, and Han Sen was just a Viscount. It was likely he would turn into a jade statue. Thousand Feather Crane prepared to carry Han Sen out the moment he looked like he was in trouble.

But the three of them were shocked when Han Sen petrified himself. The Jade Air didn't affect Han Sen's body much, and as they watched, Han Sen began to absorb it. That was surprising.

"What is that geno art? It can allow a Viscount to withstand the Jade Air on the seventh floor?" Yun Sushang was in shock.

Thousand Feather Crane stumbled slightly as he answered. "It looks like some sort of petrifying geno art, but no matter how strong it is, it shouldn't be this effective on a Viscount. That geno art cannot be a simple petrification. It must be a geno art Knife Queen gave him."

The three did not observe Han Sen for long. They were still curious, but they needed to focus on their own practice.

The seventh floor's Jade Air could not harm Han Sen while he was petrified. After he used Petrify, his body had great compatibility with Jade Air, so it was easy to absorb.

The Jade Air rushed into Han Sen's body like water. He cast The Story of Genes in the hopes he would break through with it.

Spell Armor automatically appeared around Han Sen's body and wrapped him up. The armor shone with a weird light, and mysterious symbols appeared across it. It was scary.

The other three saw the movement around Han Sen, and when they looked at him, their shock deepened. "He's going to become an Earl here?"

Han Sen had eaten a lot of grains of Galaxy Sand. He had already been on the precipice of becoming an Earl, but he had lacked a trigger.

The Jade Air would finish what the Galaxy Sand had started. Galaxy Sand was a concentrated xenogeneic gene essence, and it could be absorbed right away.

Jade Air was like ore, though. It had to be worked and refined before absorption.

When ordinary Nobles absorbed Jade Air, most of it would be wasted and released back into the room. Only small amounts of the Jade Air would actually be absorbed and processed by their bodies.

The Galaxy Sand could be used by low-tier Nobles without side-effects, so it was okay for him to have used as much as he had. But receiving too much Jade Air at once could damage a person's body.

Luckily, Han Sen did not want to absorb the Jade Air. He just wanted to use the power of the Jade Air to break through. It did not matter if it was refined or not; he just needed the strength of it.

The Jade Air on the seventh floor was strong enough. Waves battered across the threshold of his body, activating the power Spell possessed. It had managed to kickstart the evolution process of him becoming an Earl.

The mysterious Spell armor began to shift and change constantly. Thousand Feather Crane observed the armor's behavior, but he was unsure what it signified.

When the symbols of Spell became brighter, it was as if the light was coming to life. It came out of the armor, surrounding Han Sen like a group of fairies.

"This is a text spirit. It is like the spirit of our Textless Book. It is a very rare spirit!" Yun Sushang exclaimed, looking at Spell.

"It's rare, but the Rebate don't have a geno art like that. What geno art has he been practicing?" Thousand Feather Crane said with a frown.

"No matter what it is, this guy is not as simple as what meets the eye. It is very interesting." Yun Sushang looked at Han Sen with interest.

First Day looked at Han Sen with curiosity. "Brother Crane, the geno art Han Sen is practicing... How is it when compared to that of the Textless Book?"

Thousand Feather Crane shook his head. "I have not practiced with the Textless Book, and I do not know what Han Sen's geno art is. It is difficult to tell, but the Textless Book is a skill belonging to Sky Palace. It would not be weaker than any other geno art. You have practiced Truth Spell, and that comes from the Textless Book. And it is a spirit that creates text, so you should know more about it than I do."

Yes, First Day. Do you think your spirit is weaker or stronger than his?" Yun Sushang asked First Day.

First Day looked very shy, and he said the Buddha catchphrase. "I don't understand his text, but it feels like it is deeper than my own spirit."

Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane were shocked to hear this. The Textless Book was a skill not every one of the Sky could use. It had many requirements for its practice. So, while Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane were smart, they were still unable to practice with it.

Although only a few could use the Textless Book in its original form, there was a senior inside Sky Palace that had extracted a part out of it that everyone could practice. It was called Truth Spell, and even the ordinary Sky could use it.

While Truth Spell was just a small part of the Textless Book, it was strong enough to be on par with other famous geno arts. First Day was very good with it, and his talent was plain to see. If he felt this way, then it meant Han Sen's geno art had to be very strong.

When Han Sen evolved, Spell's spirit became stronger. While the symbols spun around, a vortex was created. It absorbed the Jade Air ravenously, draining the power into Han Sen's body.

Pang!

A symbol shattered, and the others that were flying around him blew up like a load of firecrackers. They were all broken.

Thousand Feather Crane and the others were shocked. They thought Han Sen had failed, but then, a giant Spell body appeared behind him. It was protecting him.

Pang!

That Spell broke, too. The fragments became a number of smaller Spells, which landed on the armor. Then they disappeared.

Thousand Feather Crane was shocked, and Han Sen didn't know whether he had succeeded or failed. But quickly, an impressive power started to radiate from Han Sen. When the others saw it, they knew for certain that Han Sen had succeeded in becoming an Earl.

“Spell Battle Body has become an Earl.”

The voice echoed through Han Sen's mind, filling him with joy. After much hard work, The Story of Genes had been brought up to Earl.

Chapter 1970 - The Fourth Stage

Chapter 1970 The Fourth Stage

Yun Suyi stopped practicing and opened her eyes. The Jade Air was no longer coming from the walls, so she looked around to see if Han Sen was around. He wasn't.

"Why hasn't Brother Crane brought Han Sen down? Are they on the fourth floor, maybe?" Yun Suyi wondered as she made her way up to the fourth floor.

There was no sign of Han Sen on the fourth floor. Yun Suyi frowned and turned back toward the stairs, intending to search the fifth floor next. But Han Sen, Thousand Feather Crane, Yun Sushang, and First Day were coming down from there.

Yun Suyi quickly moved towards them, glaring at Han Sen, "I told you to come down when I left, but you were too stubborn. Great. Now, Brother Crane and First Day have had to waste their time bringing you down. The Jade Air is only released once a week. You'll have to wait another seven days now."

Yun Sushang tugged at Yun Suyi and said, "Suyi, it's not like that."

"What is not like that?" Yun Suyi asked with obvious confusion.

First Day said, "Mister Han leveled up to Earl on the seventh floor. We have come down together, now that the Jade Air has come to an end."

When Yu Suyi heard that, her eyes widened. She looked at Han Sen with utter disbelief. "You really stayed on the seventh floor and became an Earl?"

Han Sen nodded. He wasn't going to hide his power.

Yun Suyi sensed Han Sen's energy. She was at a loss, and while she opened her mouth, she didn't say anything.

It was unheard of for a Viscount to withstand the Jade Air of the seventh floor and become an Earl. It beggared belief.

“Let’s go. We can talk more later.” Thousand Feather Crane led the way out of the White Jade Building.

White Jade Building would erupt twice in a day, and then it would go dormant for another six days. Han Sen broke through with The Story of Genes on the first day, so he didn’t care about anything else. He hadn’t discovered the secret of the White Jade Building, but he would fine to wait until the following week.

Han Sen was just happy that he had gotten Spell to Earl class.

When they said goodbye, Yun Sushang stopped Han Sen and said, “Han Sen, Brother Crane and I are going to Xuanyuan Cave in two days. If you have the time, you can come along.”

“If you don’t oppose my participation, I would like to come,” Han Sen said.

They set up a time to meet, and then Thousand Feather Crane gave Han Sen a ride back to his floating island.

“In Sky Palace, it would be ideal to obtain a flying mount. It would be much more convenient for you, even if you cannot fly yourself,” Thousand Feather Crane said as he took Han Sen back.

“Where do I find a flying mount? Can I buy one outside Sky Palace?” Han Sen thought that if they would let him bring in a xenogeneic, he could summon Little Star.

Thousand Feather Crane shook his head. “No creature from the outside can enter here, but we have a xenogeneic island to grow them. You can buy a flying mount from there. If it is merely for traveling, even a Baron class will do. It won’t cost much, but it would be better if you invested in one that was Viscount.”

Han Sen asked for the location of that xenogeneic island, and then Thousand Feather Crane left.

Han Sen returned to his room and summoned Spell, who had just leveled up. He wanted to see how she had changed.

Spell appeared in her womanly form. She flew into Han Sen's hand and became a white sniper rifle.

When Han Sen used his mind, the white sniper changed. It became a white-metal weapon that looked like a rocket launcher.

"D*mn! It has a fourth stage. Each one is better than the last." Han Sen was so happy.

But Han Sen could not test out its power in the stone house, so he put it away. He cast a spirit light and created a spell that had power in it.

"I'll find a place to try the rocket launcher later. What does this spell power do?" Han Sen thought.

After resting for some time, Han Sen planned on going to review the rules of Sky Palace. He didn't want to unwittingly break a rule.

He had no flying mount, so he used his own power to soar. Fortunately, he was Earl class. Spell's power was very strong as a result, and it was enough to carry Han Sen to the floating island that possessed the tablet.

Han Sen read the rules and tried to memorize them.

Wherever he went, knowing the rules was always important to him. Knowing the rules meant he could behave. And when he met new people, he wouldn't be seen as an enemy. Knowing the rules sometimes meant he could receive unexpected help.

There were many rules in Sky Palace. Although Han Sen could remember them all, he still took his time to memorize each one.

He looked around a little, and then, a xenogeneic that looked like a tiger landed in front of Han Sen. Yun Suyi was on its back, and she jumped down before him.

“Suyi, are you here to read the rules?” Han Sen asked her.

Yun Suyi smiled and said, “I was born in Sky Palace, and I have read the rules many times. Still, I get punished. I could recite each one with my eyes closed, so there’s no need for me to read this thing.”

That means you have come looking for me?” Han Sen looked around. There was no one else there except for him.

Yun Suyi nodded and said, “My sister knows you do not have a flying mount, so I am taking you to buy one. The Yun family is good at growing xenogeneics, and so we have a shop on the xenogeneic island. I can give you a discount.”

“Thanks,” Han Sen answered.

“Let’s go.” Yun Suyi seemed to be rather excited.

“Please wait a little while; I haven’t finished the rules yet.” Han Sen went back to reading the rules scrawled upon the tablet.

Yun Suyi waited, noticing how carefully Han Sen was reading them.

“Is he for real? I am waiting right here, and he’s still concentrating entirely on reading the tablet?” Yun Suyi waited for a while, and Han Sen continued to read. She felt depressed.

She was the daughter of the Tenth Elder. Many men wished to get close to her, but Han Sen was ignoring her, and paying attention to stupid rules instead. He was so focused, it was like he was reading through a powerful geno art.

If Yun Sushang hadn’t asked her to be nice, Yun Suyi would have left already.

A while later, Han Sen finished reading. Then, Yun Suyi jumped atop the flying tiger. She smiled at Han Sen. “I am taking you to the xenogeneic island now. You should follow!”

After that, Yun Suyi patted the tiger. Then, the tiger spread its wings and flew into the clouds. It was very fast.

“I waited so long for you, so now you can suffer a little,” Yun Suyi thought with a grin. She’d purposefully left before Han Sen could get on the mount.

Chapter 1971 - Jade Crane

Chapter 1971 Jade Crane

Yun Suyi let the flying tiger soar at full speed. It raced into the clouds in less than a second. When she turned around, no one was behind her.

“Hmph! You made me wait so long; you deserve it!” Yun Suyi did not allow her tiger to slow down. She flew straight to the xenogeneic island.

Yun Suyi planned to reach the xenogeneic island and wait for Han Sen there; she was curious to see how long it would take for him to get there.

Her jade wing tiger was a Marquise class xenogeneic. It was one of the fastest Marquise rank creatures, so it wasn't surprising that she had lost Han Sen so easily.

Yun Suyi felt cocky, but when the other students of Sky Palace flew past, they all looked at Yun Suyi strangely.

“I know I'm pretty, but you don't have to stare like that,” Yun Suyi thought.

After a while, though, she felt that something must be amiss. She knew many of the people she was passing, and although she rarely went to the xenogeneic island, she never attracted this much attention on her way there.

“Did something happen to my appearance?” Yun Suyi touched her cheek and looked at her clothes. There was nothing wrong with her.

She flew for a while longer, and people were still looking at her. She frowned and pulled out a mirror to look at herself.

“Strange. There's nothing wrong with me; everything is as it should be. I'm just as pretty—ARGH!” As Yun Suyi moved the mirror to check her face from different angles, a

mysterious shadow suddenly appeared in the mirror. A smiling person was sitting behind. It was Han Sen.

“When did you get here?” Yun Suyi turned back to take a look. Han Sen was sitting casually behind her on the tiger, and it was now no wonder why people had been looking at her.

Those people were not really watching her, though. They were looking at Han Sen.

“When you took the tiger into the sky, I was already sitting atop it. Aren’t you supposed to be taking me to the xenogeneic island? Is there something wrong with me being here? Have I misunderstood your intent?” Han Sen looked at her with a smile.

“Nothing’s wrong.” Yun Suyi blushed, refusing to look at Han Sen.

It weirded her out that Han Sen had managed to catch up.

Not even Thousand Feather Crane or Yun Sushang could match the Jade Wing Tiger’s speed. Han Sen had just become an Earl, so there was no way he could move that fast.

In truth, Han Sen did not have that speed, but he did have his rabbit shoes. They were faster than the Jade Wing Tiger, even if they lacked the ability of flight. When Jade Wing Tiger took off, Han Sen used the rabbit shoes to leap onto the tiger’s back. He then hid his presence, so Yun Suyi wouldn’t notice him.

Yun Suyi was confused, not understanding what had happened.

Jade Wing Tiger was quite fast, and they arrived at the xenogeneic island shortly after.

The xenogeneic island was comprised of many gardens, with each one containing a multitude of xenogeneic creatures. They didn’t look bloodthirsty, so it was like they were all tamed. Fitting with the theme of Sky Palace, most of them were of the flying variety.

Yun Suyi took Han Sen to her garden, and someone there welcomed them. Yun Suyi told them to get back to work, then brought Han Sen into the garden alone.

“What class of xenogeneic mount do you want? Available mounts run from Baron class all the way up to Marquise. They are already tamed, so they listen to people.” She was actually asking Han Sen how much he was willing to cough up for a xenogeneic.

Han Sen thought and said, “The cheaper the better. Anything to substitute for walking.”

Han Sen was still new in the geno universe. There were many creatures in the sanctuary that had yet to evolve. Han Sen did not need to waste his resources.

Han Sen was going to kill xenogeneics himself soon, anyway, and there was always the chance he could nab a beast soul mount. Those mounts would be far better than a tamed xenogeneic.

Yun Suyi smiled and said, “Don’t worry, my sister said I can give you the lowest possible price. You won’t get prices like this anywhere else.”

Han Sen shook his head. “I just want one that can help me fly. I don’t need one that is strong.”

When Yun Suyi saw that Han Sen wasn’t kidding, she thought for a minute. “The cheapest flying mount is a xenogeneic called a Jade Night Crane. They are in every shop, but ours are different. You saw Brother Crane’s Jade Night Crane, yes? Normally, they are Baron and hard to level up. But that one was Earl, and it came from us.”

“Sure. Give me one of those, then.” Han Sen was not picky. It was just a riding mount, so it wouldn’t be anything too special regardless of how much he paid.

You should go and pick one yourself. We have thousands of them. They are all the same price, and they are all just as good.” Yun Suyi took Han Sen to the area for the Jade Night Cranes.

Han Sen was remarkably surprised when he saw the birds swarming in flocks that looked like clouds. Sky Palace was a big faction; there weren’t many places where you could see this many tamed xenogeneics in one place.

Taming a xenogeneic was far harder than killing one. It would be easier to kill an Earl or Marquise xenogeneic than to tame a Baron xenogeneic. It was amazing that the Sky had successfully done so this many times.

“Where did these xenogeneics come from?” Han Sen asked, looking at all the Jade Night Cranes.

“Some were caught, some were raised. We will take you to Xuanyuan Cave. There is an Earl there that you can tame. If you can catch it alive, it will fetch a far loftier price than selling the xenogeneic gene material,” Yun Suyi said.

Han Sen nodded. He used his Dongxuan Aura to scan the Jade Night Cranes. If she was going to let him choose, then he might as well make the best choice that he could. He was going to pick the one with the brightest life force.

Han Sen scanned them, and he found one among them that appeared to be extra strong. When he saw it, the creature was just lying down in the grass. It didn't appear to be as active as the others.

Yun Suyi, seeing Han Sen look at that Jade Night Crane, said, “That one is a Viscount. It was a Baron xenogeneic that was bought by a Viscount. It was later raised to become a Viscount itself, but after a grueling fight, its legs were cut off and its wings were damaged. It recovered from its wounds, but it is still disabled. Now, its flying speed is only Baron class. Also, it still doesn't have legs...”

Yun Suyi stopped talking, but it was obvious what had happened.

Chapter 1972 - Xuanyuan Cave

Chapter 1972 Xuanyuan Cave

“Can it fly while carrying heavy items?” Han Sen asked, examining the bird.

“Yes; it is much stronger than Baron class Jade Night Cranes, but it has no legs and its wings are damaged,” Yun Suyi repeated. “It can’t fly any faster than an average Baron. And its fighting abilities cannot compare with a Viscount mount.”

“I’ll take him.” Han Sen did not plan on letting the mount do any fighting, so it’d be suitable for simple travel.

A damaged Jade Night Crane was not expensive, and it was just a little more pricey than basic xenogeneic gene material. Yun Suyi gave Han Sen a very good deal.

The Jade Night Crane was very tame, and Han Sen was quickly able to learn how to command it. He could control it in flight easily.

Because it had no legs, it always landed on its belly. And because the wings were partially disabled, it never could fly completely straight. Its speed left much to be desired, as well.

Fortunately, Han Sen did not have high expectations. So, after he made the purchase, he rode the crane back to his island.

Jade Night Crane was flying again, and it looked excited to be doing so. It kept squawking, and with amusing dedication, it diligently took Han Sen to his desired destination.

“Poor thing. It got hurt because of its master, and then it was abandoned. And now he is okay and can obey commands. Many creatures with high intelligence can’t do that.” Han Sen sighed.

Back on his island, Han Sen let the crane land. But before it touched down, Han Sen jumped off.

The crane's belly hit the ground as it frantically flapped its wings. The creature had tried to keep itself level when it landed, but the attempt didn't go very well.

Han Sen gave it some food and let it stay on the stone. Then, Han Sen returned to the house. Before he went to Xuanyuan Cave, he wanted to come to grips with his powers. He took stock of his possessions.

Earl class Spell geno armament. Duke beast soul rabbit shoes. Earl beast soul Red Mist Mink Glove, and King weapon Ghost Teeth Knife.

With Ghost Teeth Knife there, his Teeth Knife skills would still be the best to use. Teeth Knife wouldn't have any breakthroughs, though, so he planned to focus on a different geno art.

Using the energy flow from the Jade Turtle Spell, the feelings of Sky Palace, and some parts of Coin, he planned to make up a brand new geno art.

"My Coin focuses on powers that suppress. Why don't I just modify Coin and make it better? But I can only use Coin, or a geno art that looks like Coin, when I'm in my Dollar identity. Otherwise, people might take notice. So, if I can't make something too similar to Coin, what kind of geno art should I make?" Han Sen thought about it, and he soon came up with an idea.

Jade Turtle Spell focused on suppressing one's speed. Once you got hit with it, you could not fly. Han Sen wanted to use that aspect as a focus for his new geno art creation. He wanted to merge elements of Sky Palace and Coin. As for modifying Coin, that was something he could do later.

Han Sen kept testing his ideas in the room and learned a lot. Combining them wasn't proving too difficult. He created his new geno art through repeated testing.

After pulling an all-nighter, he formulated a prototype of his new geno art. It was something he had no difficulty casting. All he had to do was improve the minor details of its design.

“Let’s call this geno art Turtle,” Han Sen decided.

Because he could not find a target to use it on, Han Sen didn’t know exactly how effective Turtle would be.

Han Sen took a break to rest, and when it was daytime, he walked out the door. The legless crane was resting beneath a tree. Han Sen fed it again, then rode it to where he was supposed to meet with Thousand Feather Crane.

Outside of Xuanyuan Cave, Han Sen saw Thousand Feather Crane, First Day, and the Yun sisters.

Yun Sushang immediately apologized for her sister’s presence. “Suyi wants to follow us in our exploration. I will be in charge of her safety, so if something happens, do not worry. Do whatever you need to.”

Since she had said that, no one objected. They left their mounts outside and headed into Xuanyuan Cave.

Xuanyuan Island looked like a small volcano. The volcano’s entrance led them into a gigantic volcano cave world. The cave led off in a number of different directions, and there were swathes of xenogeneics inside.

Xuanyuan Cave xenogeneics were very special. The most special ones among them were called Xuan Jade Spirits. Xuan Jade Spirits could travel through walls and appear in any comer they chose. They were difficult to avoid.

So, once people entered the cave system, they had to be careful. They could be attacked by Xuan Jade Spirits at any time.

At any moment, a mouth or claw could come shooting out of the rock.

“Brother Han, this is your first time in Xuanyuan Cave. Be careful. Xuan Jade Spirits can appear without any warning.

We might not be able to help you in time, if they get you,” Yun Sushang said.

Han Sen nodded, and he opened his Dongxuan Aura. He kept everything envisioned in his head. Any movement within a radius of ten meters would not escape his notice.

They walked a mile into the caves without spotting a single xenogeneic, but Han Sen did not let his guard down. He kept the Dongxuan Aura running the entire time.

Suddenly, though, Han Sen saw a black jade hand come out from the ground. It tried to grab Yun Suyi by her legs. The Xuan Jade Spirit’s nails were black like daggers. If it got hold of Yun Suyi, it could rip her legs off without much trouble.

Because they hadn’t met Xuan Jade Spirits for a long time, Yun Suyi had dropped her guard. She was only a Viscount, as well. She was not strong enough to react with the immediacy required.

Han Sen summoned Spell in front of him and fired her guns. After the popping noise of gunfire, two of the Xuan Jade’s claws were broken by the bullets.

Where the bullets hit, symbols were left behind.

The Xuan Jade jerked its injured hands away and retreated into the stone. It left no sign of its passing. The surface of the stone was perfect, as if the creature had never been there in the first place.

Han Sen noticed he was able to feel where the Xuan Jade hands would come from. There was thick stone and rock all about, but he felt as if he received a signal from beyond it. Han Sen could feel exactly where they were.

“Is this a power that Spell possesses?” Han Sen was shocked. When Spell hit something, it was like she was placing a tracker. The tracker didn’t deal damage, but it was very useful.

Chapter 1973 - Killing Ghost Claw Beas

Chapter 1973 Killing Ghost Claw Beas

“Suyi, say thank you to Han Sen.” Yun Sushang nudged Yun Suyi with a hand.

Yun Suyi was still a bit rattled, but she stepped forward and said to Han Sen, “Thank you for saving me.”

“It’s okay. Even if I hadn’t struck, it couldn’t have hurt you. I just wanted to find out the power of the Xuan Jade Spirit.” Han Sen smiled. He wasn’t suggesting that Suyi was strong, but acknowledging that Sushang was right beside her.

There was no way the creature would have been permitted to hurt her.

But Sushang was surprised that Han Sen had reacted before she had. Han Sen had just become an Earl, and if his reaction speeds were superior to theirs already, that was most certainly not normal.

Yun Suyi looked at Spell with curiosity. “Han Sen, is that your geno armament? It is special. I have never seen one like that before.”

Thousand Feather Crane was just as curious. Prior to this, they had only seen Spell’s armor mode. Her second mode looked like a person, and this was something they hadn’t seen before.

Han Sen smiled, but he did not answer the question. He asked, “That Xuan Jade Spirit was not strong. Aside from being able to travel through stone, what else can they do?”

Thousand Feather Crane said, “That one was an Earl class Ghost Claw Beast. They aren’t the strongest of Earls, but they are very fast. They can appear through the rock, so they are very dangerous if you are careless. Even cutting off the creature’s claws won’t kill it. They

can regenerate. It's very annoying. If you want to kill it for good, you need to damage the stone it resides in, once it has revealed itself with the claws."

Yun Sushang said, "Ghost Claw Beasts are too fast. Most of the time, we can't detect their presence until it is too late. And if they miss or break their claws, they'll run away. Second chances are rare. So, when you want to kill one, you need two Earls. One can cut the claws while the other pummels the body inside the stone."

After that, Yun Sushang struck a rock with her knuckles and said, "The Xuanyuan rock is very hard. With our powers, we can only cut through an inch of the stone at a time. The Ghost Claw Beasts raise their claws around one foot out of the rock. Then, they attack."

"Thank you for teaching me," Han Sen said gratefully.

They kept walking, and Han Sen felt as if the Ghost Claw Beasts were right next to them. One was getting ready to attack again.

It was the same Ghost Claw Beast, and it wanted revenge. It kept following them, ready to perform a Ghost Claw Slash upon them. But it had been hurt by Spell once already, so it was exercising great caution. It didn't come too close yet, and it watched and waited for an opportunity from beneath the stone.

"Be careful; there are xenogeneics up ahead," Thousand Feather Crane told them. He was up front.

Han Sen looked forward, and he saw a blurry shadow. Without Thousand Feather Crane's warning, he would not have known that it was a xenogeneic.

The group soon got close enough to see it clearly, however. It was a bug that was native to the cave, and it looked like a centipede. Its shell was of a bluish hue, and there was a face emblazoned upon its back. It looked creepy.

"Earl class Face Centipede. Be careful. Face Centipedes appear in a group, mostly. They don't travel alone." Yun Suyi explained this for Han Sen's benefit, as the others there were

no strangers to the cave. Face Centipedes were quite common, and the Sky were familiar with how they behaved.

The Face Centipede soon saw Han Sen, and it came scurrying over. It let out a wretched sound that drew the attention and ire of more in the vicinity.

“Get ready to fight!” Thousand Feather Crane shouted and drew his sword.

Yun Sushang and Yun Suyi wielded swords, as well. First Day didn’t draw a weapon, though; his hands gleamed with white light. He slapped the ground, leaving white marks on the dirt. His spirit covered an area that was three meters wide and brightened up the entire place.

First Day slapped the ground another five times, and then he said something. Then, six spirits rose toward the feet of Han Sen and the others. Power entered their bodies.

“What a strong spirit! It increases power and speed by a lot.” Han Sen was in shock. He looked at First Day, and he was really surprised that the shy Buddha could pull something like this off.

Seeing Han Sen look at him, the Buddha man awkwardly glanced away. He said, “I was sent here to study when I was young. I practiced the Truth Spell of Sky Palace.”

Very nice,” Han Sen said. Ever since Han Sen had been forced to leave Disloyal Knight behind, he hadn’t seen much in the way of buffs and boons.

Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane stood inside the radius of the spell to fight with the Face Centipedes.

Their sword airs looked like clouds, and they moved like silk in the sky. It was very light and strange.

The Face Centipedes were getting killed by the silk sword air. Their shells cracked under the force, and a few died immediately on contact.

The path was very narrow, and since Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane had a handle on the situation, Han Sen didn't bother helping.

Yun Suyi wanted to fight, but she couldn't. She started to say something to Han Sen, and so she turned around. But she looked at Spell, who was standing next to Han Sen, Spell was transforming her pistols into a sniper rifle. The long weapon dropped into Spell's hands, and she pointed it toward Yun Suyi and pulled the trigger.

Yun Suyi was frozen. Spell had moved too quickly for her to react. She saw a shining bullet fly out of Spell's rifle and whiz right past her face.

Pang!

The bullet hit the stone wall behind her, and the cracking sound hurt her ears.

Yun Suyi turned around to take a look. A hand bearing jade claws hovered behind her, inches from her neck. It was frozen in place.

There was a bullet hole in the stone wall, and black blood seeped out of it.

"Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Jade Ghost Claw Beast: xenogeneic gene found."

An announcement played in Han Sen's head, but it was a shame he did not receive a beast soul.

"Thank you." Yun Suyi looked at Han Sen with a complex expression.

This was the second time Han Sen had saved her, and this time, he had managed to one-hit-kill a Ghost Claw Beast by himself. Such reaction speed and powers were difficult to find amongst Earls.

Chapter 1974 - Spell Becomes Strong

Chapter 1974 Spell Becomes Strong

Han Sen was surprised. He was not surprised that Spell could kill the Ghost Claw Beast, but that her pistols could turn into a sniper rifle. He knew that Spell herself could transform, but he hadn't known she could change her weapons.

“So, that means Spell can use any type of weapon? It might not have to be a weapon all the time, either,” Han Sen thought.

He had simply commanded Spell to slay the Ghost Claw Beast, and Spell had used her own judgment to select the sniper. It had greater power and bullet penetration.

She now had three different weapons. There were the pistols, for short-range quickfire. The power was mild, but she could take a lot of shots in little time.

The sniper had the longest range of attack, and its damage was quite devastating. It could penetrate through materials, but bullets took a long time to regenerate.

The rocket launcher did not have the range of the sniper rifle, but it dealt AOE damage across a wide area. This took even longer to regenerate a round, though.

The three of them had different functions and benefits. It was difficult to determine if one was outright better than the another. Depending on the situation, any of the weapons might prove more beneficial than the others. That was Spell's greatest strength. She could adapt to almost any scenario.

Not long after Han Sen killed the Ghost Claw Beast, Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane finished off the five Face Centipedes.

Han Sen went ahead and started digging into the stone. There was a monkey-looking jade monster inside, with its head blown wide open. It was the Ghost Claw Beast.

When Yun Suyi saw that Spell had targeted the creature's forehead, the sight shocked her. She hadn't expected Spell to possess that level of accuracy, allowing her to take aim at the felon's head while it was still inside a wall.

They dug up the xenogeneic genes and kept going. The Ghost Claw Beast's xenogeneic gene was a black skull. A piece of shell was the xenogeneic gene of the Face Centipedes.

"We have only just entered Xuanyuan Cave, and already we have received rewards like this. We are quite lucky. We could go back now if we wanted to." Yun Sushang smiled.

Finding a xenogeneic during the next part of their trip wasn't so easy. They walked for another two hours and found nothing.

"Han Sen, your geno armament is amazing. It looks like a person, and it can change weapons. What is her name?" Yun Suyi asked Han Sen.

"Spell," Han Sen said.

"Good name." Maybe it was because Han Sen had saved her twice, but she was being much nicer to him now. She seemed quite keen on chatting with him.

"Ssshhh," Thousand Feather Crane hushed them. Everyone went quiet. Thousand Feather Crane put his ear next to the wall, which made the others catch their breath. If there was a Xuan Jade Spirit residing right there, Thousand Feather Crane was a dead man.

Fortunately, that did not happen. He had been confident that no creatures lurked within the wall, and he was correct. After a while, he raised his head again and said with a look of importance, "I heard a Xuanyuan Dragon."

Hearing that name, everyone's faces changed. Yun Sushang frowned. "How far? Is it coming for us?"

"I think it is headed our way." Thousand Feather Crane looked serious.

"If it is us five versus a Xuanyuan Dragon, we won't win. Let's go back," First Day said.

“Yeah.” Thousand Feather Crane and Yun Sushang agreed.

Han Sen did not know what this new threat was, but he was fine with the idea of leaving, if that was the general consensus.

When they started to retreat, First Day said, “Xuanyuan Dragons are the strongest xenogeneics to be found in Xuanyuan Cave. Those things are born Marquise. We cannot fight them.”

Han Sen nodded, then he glanced down. Spell fired her pistols at Han Sen’s feet.

A Ghost Claw had just come out of there, grabbing toward Han Sen’s feet. The bullets pierced through the enemy, prompting it to return to the rock.

But there were more and more of the things emerging all around them. They were all thrust into danger.

Yun Sushang wielded her sword quickly to protect Yun Suyi. Thousand Feather Crane and First Day used their powers to stop the claws that kept coming out.

But the creatures seemed to be countless. Han Sen and the others were Earls, but Yun Suyi was a mere Viscount. She wouldn’t be able to protect herself. Yun Sushang, Thousand Feather Crane, and First Day diligently did their best to protect her.

“This isn’t right! Why are there so many Ghost Claws, all of a sudden?” Yun Sushang said as she fought back the Ghost Claw Beasts.

The Ghost Claw Beasts must know that the Xuanyuan Dragon is coming. They want to stop us from leaving,” Thousand Feather Crane said.

First Day said, “Not bad. These guys are just here to hinder and annoy us. We cannot get close enough to the walls to attack them, though. Slashing their claws off won’t work, as they can quickly generate replacements.”

Pang! Spell used her sniper rifle to attack. The bullet penetrated the rock, and the hole sent blood squirting out everywhere.

“You guys protect Suyi. Draw them out, and I will have Spell kill them,” Han Sen said as he ran.

Spell had used her pistol to fire at many claws earlier, leaving spells attached to them. Now, that made them easier to detect. When they rose to the surface of the rock, Spell would shoot them before they could extend their claws fully.

The sniper rifle’s piercing power was wickedly strong, but it still took some time to generate each new bullet. One second passed between each shot, which made it difficult to keep up with the onslaught of creatures.

Even so, watching her work was pretty awesome.

Thousand Feather Crane protected Suyi as they ran. Spell fired a shot every second. With each squeeze of the trigger, a Ghost Claw Beast died.

“Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Jade Ghost Claw Beast: xenogeneic gene found. Obtained Jade Ghost Claw Beast beast soul.”

When Spell killed her eighth Ghost Claw Beast, Han Sen finally heard the announcement he’d been hoping for. He didn’t have time to check out the beast soul right now, though. And neither could he dig up the bodies residing in the stone. They were all busy trying to run outside.

Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane looked behind them, and they saw Spell shooting the Ghost Claw Beasts.

She dropped each one with a single shot before their claws were even revealed. They had no clue how such a thing was possible.

But they did not have time to ponder that. Spell killed many Ghost Claw Beasts along the way, but there were still too many of them. The group was not escaping quickly.

“The Xuanyuan Dragon is here!” Thousand Feather Crane screamed, his face going pale.

As his scream echoed off the walls, a strange noise came from deeper in the cave. A black shadow stretched toward them, filling the air with the smell of blood.

Chapter 1975 - Xuanyuan Dragon

Chapter 1975 Xuanyuan Dragon

The creature's scales were as black as ink. Its head had no horns, but the ears were fixed with black wings. Its belly had talons, like those of an eagle. It was coming his way, and black smoke billowed around it. It looked very creepy.

The Xuanyuan Dragon was too fast, and there were still the Ghost Claw Beasts to fend off. Even if the Ghost Claw Beasts hadn't been there, Han Sen's group still wouldn't have been able to outrun the dragon.

In a second, the Xuanyuan Dragon was a mere twenty meters away from them. It opened its maw and fired a plume of black smoke in their direction. The smoke blackened the passage as it came toward them.

"The Xuanyuan Dragon's breath is toxic. Do not breathe it in!" Thousand Feather Crane shouted, and then a cloud exploded from his body. The eye on his forehead opened up and shone. The shining light made him stronger.

"The sky and the clouds are invincible! The sword can kill the sky!" Thousand Feather Crane shouted. A white sword air surrounded his ancient sword, and he swung it forward.

The white sword air sliced open the black toxic smoke. The sword air continued on until it struck the dragon's head. Then, it was gone.

"You guys leave now." Thousand Feather Crane clutched his sword tight and ran for the dragon. His body was emitting clouds, and he flew forward like a fairy.

"Take Suyi." Yun Sushang pushed Yun Suyi to First Day, then the eye on her forehead opened. A new sword air surrounded her ancient sword as well, and she went to fight beside Thousand Feather Crane.

They lifted their swords and attacked together, breaking the Xuanyuan Dragon's breath. They stopped the advance of the Xuanyuan Dragon and fought it hard. The dragon could not do anything.

"So this is the power of the Sky! When their third eyes are opened, they are far stronger." Han Sen watched in awe.

Thousand Feather Crane and Yun Sushang's power could go up against a Marquise creature, and it seemed likely that they could actually kill one.

But the Xuanyuan Dragon was no ordinary Marquise. Its scales were incredibly strong, and its power was just as impressive. Thousand Feather Crane and Yun Sushang broke through the breath, but they could not break the scales.

The snow white sword air swung down across the black scales, but it could only leave behind a white scratch mark.

Han Sen let Spell fire a few bullets at the Xuanyuan Dragon, but when the bullets hit the target, they shattered into dust.

"So strong!" Han Sen shouted in his heart.

"Mister Han, please take Suyi and leave this place," First Day said, as he proceeded to cast Truth Spell. The spells landed on the ground of the area, then surged forward to land on Yun Sushang and Thousand Feather Crane. It helped buff their power and speed.

Some of his spells hit the Xuanyuan Dragon, but those appeared to be futile.

Three elites were now in battle against the Xuanyuan Dragon, but that only seemed to make it angrier. A black light grew in the center of its black. The black light became dragon wings, and they gave it speed.

The Xuanyuan Dragon flapped its wings, and its ten-meter-long body performed a loop in the air.

Katcha!

Yun Sushang could not dodge it. The dragon bit down on her sword, and then, the sword broke.

At the same time, the tail of the dragon was swinging towards First Day. First Day's body was glowing with white light. Truth Spell gave him a bubble shield, but the tail obliterated it with a single strike. It sent his body flying against the cavern walls like a meteor. He screamed as it body slammed into the wall and cracked it, then he coughed up blood.

“Oh no! It is a mutant xenogeneic. It has reinforced scales and a faster flying speed.” Thousand Feather Crane moved like a cloud. He picked up Yun Sushang, waved a sword air, and broke the black smoke the dragon was exhaling.

“Spell, protect her!” Han Sen told Spell, then pulled out Ghost Teeth Knife. The rabbit shoes appeared on his feet, and he gripped his knife with the Red Mink Gloves.

Han Sen moved like a shadow, moving right behind the Xuanyuan Dragon. Using Tusk, he swung at the back of the Xuanyuan Dragon's neck.

His attack only produced a dong noise. Not even the Ghost Teeth Knife's Teeth power could break through the Xuanyuan Dragon's scales. It could only leave a scratch mark on the scales. And although his knife possessed Teeth power and emitted a dangerous purple smoke, it still seemed useless.

That hard?” Han Sen was shocked.

“Don't fight it. Run! It is a mutant xenogeneic, and its body far exceeds its actual level.” Thousand Feather Crane slashed to draw the Xuanyuan Dragon's attention while he shouted.

But the Xuanyuan Dragon was too fast. It flapped its wings and became a black horse directly in front of Thousand Feather Crane. Thousand Feather Crane's sword air collided with the horse, and the sword air shattered. Still, he could not hurt it.

Seeing that the black horse was about to grab Thousand Feather Crane, he shouted. He held Yun Sushang tighter and took off in flight. He moved so fast that it looked like he teleported away from the attack.

But Thousand Feather Crane's face turned pale. His hands trembled as he gave Yun Sushang to Yun Suyi. "Sushang and Suyi, you guys leave with First Day. Han Sen and I have got this."

Roar! The Xuanyuan Dragon's attack had missed. It turned around and went after First Day, who had just stood up from the rubble.

First Day gritted his teeth. His legs shone, like he was stepping on a lotus. And he cast a spell, which left a glowing symbol behind with every step he took. Every symbol caused him to accelerate.

But he still could not dodge the Xuanyuan Dragon's attacks, and the talons were in front of him.

First Day held out his palm, and a True Light came out of it to counter the talon. The gold light and the black light collided against each other. First Day was sent flying, though, all the way back into the stone. The True Light was broken.

The dragon was cruel, and it went for First Day once again. Thousand Feather Crane's Sky eye shone. He was bleeding, but he summoned a cloud air. The sword air became a white dragon, and it roared. It went for Xuanyuan Dragon.

A black dragon and a white dragon surged toward each other. Then the Xuanyuan Dragon flapped its wings to become a black horse and avoid the engagement. It was going for Yun Sushang and Yun Suyi.

"Careful, sister!" Thousand Feather Crane's face went grey. This strike had cost all his power, and there was nothing he could do to save them.

Yun Sushang knew that they weren't fast enough to dodge the attack. She summoned an ancient sword and her Sky eye shone. She slashed a sword air up at the dragon.

Han Sen was currently sprinting, and the rabbit shoes gave him the speed of a dragon. He went behind the dragon and slashed it on the side.

Dong!

Two noises sounded at the same time. Yun Sushang heaved blood as she was sent careening away. Han Sen slashed the dragon's stomach again. He left a mark, but he didn't see flesh.

Chapter 1976 - Slap Your Turtle, Son

Chapter 1976 Slap Your Turtle, Son

The Xuanyuan Dragon turned to Han Sen and breathed out smoke. Han Sen fell back and swung the Ghost Teeth Knife, breaking the black smoke.

Xuanyuan Dragon spun around and put its attention back on Yun Sushang. Thousand Feather Crane was coming, but he was not as fast as the dragon.

First Day cast True Light, but his attack didn't reach the dragon. He screamed, "He's too fast!"

What First Day said gave Han Sen inspiration. He had just created Turtle, and he had almost forgotten that it specialized in bringing down a creature's speed.

Xuanyuan Dragon was almost in front of Yun Sushang, and Han Sen's legs sent him leaping forward at incredible speed. He gathered up power in his hand and brought a slap towards the black horse.

The rabbit shoes' speed was equal to that of the dragon. And in no time at all, a jade white palm came pressing against the dragon's head.

Thousand Feather Crane and the others did not think Han Sen's palm would achieve much. They knew Han Sen was wielding a King class knife, and they knew he had practiced Teeth Knife; if those skills could not damage the dragon, what could a palm do?

Thousand Feather Crane and First Day were out of range, and Spell kept firing her pistols ineffectually at the dragon. Yun Sushang obviously thought that she was about to die, so she pushed Yun Suyi away. Then, her body exploded with a cloud. She was going to fight the dragon with everything she had remaining.

Pang!

Han Sen slapped the Xuanyuan Dragon's head. Then, the horse-looking dragon fell out of the air. It was like Han Sen had knocked him down to the floor.

Thousand Feather Crane and the others were all in shock. They looked at the Xuanyuan Dragon, that was now lying on the ground. And there, where Han Sen had delivered his strike, was the image of Turtle Spell.

The Xuanyuan Dragon slammed into the ground and roared in rage. It flapped its wings as it tried to get back into the air, and that was what surprised Yun Sushang the most.

No matter how much it flapped its wings, the Xuanyuan Dragon could not get airborne again. It was like a duck, attempting to take off. Ultimately, despite all its frantic flapping, it couldn't get off the ground.

Yun Sushang's mouth dropped wide open as she stared at the dragon. This was too powerful, and they were all gobsmacked.

"What are you gawking at? Run!" Han Sen yelled at them, snapping them out of their daze.

Yun Sushang pulled Yun Suyi away. First Day followed from behind, casting True Spell on the dragon. Thousand Feather Crane was attacking, too.

But they were all drained by now, and their attacks lacked the vigor they'd possessed earlier.

The dragon was really angry at Han Sen. It completely ignored First Day and Thousand Feather Crane's attacks. It tried coming for Han Sen. It did not fly to him, and instead it wriggled and crawled. It moved forward steadily, if much more slowly.

Han Sen, seeing the Xuanyuan Dragon's speed, became very happy. With how slowly the dragon was now moving, and there was no need for Han Sen to feel threatened.

There was another pang noise as the Xuanyuan Dragon broke Thousand Feather Crane's sword air and First Day's True Spell. It continued coming for Han Sen, venting smoke from its mouth.

Han Sen moved. He dodged the thickest section of the smoke. He slashed with his knife and cut through the smoke. Then, he moved to the dragon's side and slapped the dragon's face.

Another Turtle Spell manifested on the dragon's face, dropping its speed yet again.

Han Sen moved like a shadow. He put away his Ghost Teeth Knife, opened his hands, and repeatedly slapped the dragon in the face.

The Xuanyuan Dragon was so slow. It couldn't catch up with Han Sen and his rabbit shoes, so there was nothing to keep Han Sen from continuing to b*tchslap it in the face. Images of the Turtle Spell covered its face.

Thousand Feather Crane and First Day watched Han Sen beating on the creature. The fleeing sisters stopped running. Their mouths opened wide, unable to quite fathom what they were seeing.

The Xuanyuan Dragon was acting as if it was stupid. It stood where it was, allowing Han Sen to slap it non-stop. It was getting slower and slower, and the scene played out as if it was in slow-motion.

Han Sen felt very good hitting it, and as he did so, he thought to himself, "Slap your turtle, son! Fly! Slap your turtle, son! Run!"

First Day and the others could guess that Han Sen's slapping was some sort of geno art that slowed down the speed of an opponent. First Day had a geno art like that, but it hadn't worked on the Xuanyuan Dragon when he tried it.

They were both Earls, yet Han Sen's geno art was far more effective on the Xuanyuan Dragon. It confused First Day.

Han Sen did not think his Turtle would be that great. It could stop a foe from flying, and it could slow an enemy down. Surprisingly, it worked on a dragon that was a Marquise and a mutant.

But the strangeness soon wore off. Turtle came from the Jade Turtle Spell. The Jade Turtle was created from the remains of an old deified turtle shell. The power was deified. Han Sen also included his experience under the suppression of the deified Sky Palace leader, then threw in Coin for good measure. With Han Sen's current power, Turtle might not have been able to subdue a King class enemy, but it worked just fine on Marquises or Dukes.

And Turtle could stack. Han Sen continued to slap the Xuanyuan Dragon, and in the end, the dragon was as slow as a snail. It was like a slow-motion scene on TV.

The Xuanyuan Dragon was so angry that its eyes almost popped from their sockets. Its gaze was burning with hatred. If stares could kill, it would have murdered Han Sen a long time ago.

The dragon might only have the speed of a turtle now, but its power had not been affected. It could still exhale toxic air, but it could not move and it could not hit the nimble Han Sen with the smoke.

Han Sen kept using Teeth Knife to slash at the dragon's neck. He struck the beast hundreds of times, and knifelight were everywhere. Not long after, the dragon's neck started to bleed. The blood gleamed visibly in the knifelight.

Thousand Feather Crane and the others could tell the dragon was going to perish, so they didn't help out. They didn't want to steal the kill. They did, however, commit to clearing the Ghost Claw Beasts that were still nearby.

Yun Suyi saw the knifelight reflecting off the blood and stared, deep in thought.

Patong!

The screams of the Xuanyuan Dragon suddenly cut off as Ghost Teeth Knife severed the dragon's head.

“Xenogeneic Marquise mutant hunted. Xuanyuan Dragon: xenogeneic gene found. Obtained mutant Xuanyuan Dragon beast soul.”

Chapter 1977 - Mutant Gene

Chapter 1977 Mutant Gene

After killing the Xuanyuan Dragon, the crew left Xuanyuan Cave.

Han Sen didn't feel very well, and First Day and Yun Sushang were injured. They couldn't keep going. They also had to carry out the dead bodies of the Xuanyuan Dragon and Ghost Claw Beasts.

The Xuanyuan Dragon's body was very useful, and it also had xenogeneic genes. They didn't want to waste it.

Han Sen cut open the Xuanyuan Dragon's head under Thousand Feather Crane's supervision. He took out a brain orb, which was the xenogeneic gene of this creature.

The brain orb was around the size of a fist. It looked like a black crystal. The strangest thing was that there was a Xuanyuan Dragon with wings inside it.

When Han Sen obtained the brain orb, an announcement played.

“Obtained Marquise Mutant xenogeneic gene. Insufficient Marquise genes. Cannot refine.”

Han Sen was surprised, and he thought, “What does that mean? Will absorbing that mutant gene require other genes as some sort of base?”

Han Sen put away the brain orb for the moment. He gathered up the other spoils and left the cave alongside the others.

“Han Sen, which geno art did you use on the Xuanyuan Dragon? You made it unable to move. That is something extremely powerful,” Yun Suyi said to Han Sen as they walked.

“It is a geno art that is used to reduce the speed of enemies. It is called Turtle,” Han Sen answered.

Hearing that name, Yun Suyi and the others looked surprised. Yun Suyi smiled and said, “This name is good. And you really did turn the Xuanyuan Dragon into a turtle.”

Thousand Feather Crane and the others were shocked. They didn’t expect a skill used to reduce speed could be that effective. It wasn’t an ordinary geno art, that was for sure.

After a short discussion, Han Sen sold the Xuanyuan Dragon to Yun Sushang. Yun Sushang called her people over from the shop to come and claim it.

Han Sen was only going to take the xenogeneic genes of the dragon and a few of the Ghost Claw Beasts with him. Then, he rode his legless bird back to his island.

On his way home, Han Sen looked at his new beast soul.

Ghost Claw Beast: Weapon

Han Sen summoned the Ghost Claw beast soul. It was indeed a weapon, and it looked very similar to the Ghost Claws.

Ghost Claw had a three-foot-long handle with a clawlike blade on the end. He wasn’t quite sure what kind of weapon it was.

He put away the Ghost Claw blade and summoned the mutant Xuanyuan beast soul.

Mutant Xuanyuan Dragon: Flying type

After Han Sen summoned it, he felt rather depressed. He had thought he would grow awesome wings behind him, but that wasn’t the case. When he summoned it, it wasn’t as intimidating as the black wings that had grown from the dragon’s back. Instead, a small pair of Xuanyuan wings spawned near Han Sen’s ears.

They weren't broad wings; they were just a pair of small ear wings. They looked beautiful, but Han Sen did not think they would be very useful at all.

Han Sen tried flying with the wings, and it worked. They were very fast. They were almost as good as the rabbit shoes.

The rabbit shoes only increased his movement speed on the ground. They did not improve his flying speed. The dragon wings would improve his speed in the air, so they were very suitable for Sky Palace. This beast soul could turn out to be very useful.

There might be times he would have to fight while in the air. He couldn't just use rabbit shoes to fight then, and so having the dragon wings would make things easier.

But when he used the dragon wings, he did look rather funny.

Han Sen melted the Ghost Claw Beast genes, and then he drank the broth. He felt the power spread through his body. He felt cold, as if he was being washed in a rush of cold water.

“Earl Xenogeneic Genes +1”

Han Sen had nine xenogeneic materials in total, from the Ghost Claw Beasts. After he ate them, he ended up with nine xenogeneic gene points.

Mutant Xuanyuan Dragon's xenogeneic gene, however, could not be melted. Thus, Han Sen couldn't eat it. It was just as the announcement had said; Han Sen did not have enough Marquise genes, so he couldn't refine the mutant xenogeneic gene.

Han Sen rested for the night, and then there was nothing to do the next day, either. White Jade Jing had not opened yet, so there was no need to go there. As a result, he had nothing to do. So, he planned to go and kill xenogeneics inside Xuanyuan Cave again—this time, alone. He wanted to fill up his Earl gene tallies so that his geno arts would have an easier time breaking through.

Han Sen rode the legless crane to Xuanyuan Cave. He left it outside and entered the cave alone.

Thousand Feather Crane and the others hadn't come, so Han Sen only had to worry about himself. He used his rabbit shoes to run deep into the cave at a speedy pace.

Perhaps it was because the rabbit shoes were too fast, but the Xuan Jade Spirits did not make an appearance. He ran for three hours. He ran past where they killed the Xuanyuan Dragon, and there was still no sign of any xenogeneics.

Han Sen didn't dare slow down, as he wanted to draw out whatever creatures he could. He met some people hunting xenogeneics; people from Sky Palace. They were in a group, and only Han Sen had entered alone.

When the Sky Palace students saw Han Sen running around by himself, they were shocked.

Xuan Jade Spirits could appear at random, so it was dangerous to venture inside alone. When students came there to hunt, they would always bring a partner. It was rare to see something like Han Sen venturing inside all alone.

As Han Sen walked forward, he didn't see any Xuan Jade Spirits, but he heard a voice calling for help from deeper inside the cave.

Han Sen looked in that direction and saw a Sky man running toward him. There was an ant behind him with a head as big as a cat.

Han Sen summoned Spell. She lifted her sniper rifle and fired a bullet, blowing the xenogeneic's head off from a few hundred meters away.

"Xenogeneic Viscount hunted. Jade Ant: xenogeneic gene found."

"Run!" The Sky man came running, shouting at Han Sen as he came.

"Why run? It's dead," Han Sen said.

The Sky man continued running, and he cried out, "It's not just one. There are many!"

"How many?" Han Sen asked.

"Many! Many! Run!" The Sky man ran past Han Sen.

Han Sen did not ask anything further, as he saw Jade Ants pouring out of the cavern behind the Sky man. There were too many to count.

"That is a lot!" Han Sen was not scared. Instead, he was happy. His eyes turned bright.

Without Han Sen even needing to issue a command, Spell swapped her sniper rifle for an RPG. She placed the rocket launcher on her shoulder, put herself into position, and pulled the trigger.

A rocket shot out and slammed into the center of the horde of ants.

Chapter 1978 - Ant Nes

Chapter 1978 Ant Nes

Boom!

A white light exploded amidst the horde of ants. A mushroom cloud was generated, and it rocked the entire cavern.

Announcements played in Han Sen's head, over and over, countless times. Han Sen heard himself receive two Jade Ant beast souls. They slid into his Sea of Soul.

"Awesome!" Han Sen felt great. He hadn't felt like this in a long time.

The Sky fellow stopped and stared in shock. He was frozen by what he had just witnessed.

Spell fired another rocket, and it landed amidst the Jade Ants. Countless more died, and roasted corpses were scattered all about.

"D*mn! Your gear is powerful." The man came running back. He looked at Spell as he spoke.

"It's all right. It's strong, but I'm also just lucky," Han Sen said smarmily.

Spell required three seconds to generate a rocket after each use, but after firing three or four of them consecutively, the Jade Ants that were still alive retreated back into the tunnel and did not return.

The guy didn't object to what Han Sen said. He thought it made fine sense. But he still looked at Spell with hefty interest, and said, "My name is Yu Jing. What is yours?"

"Han Sen," Han Sen said.

You are the Han Sen that was carried into Sky Palace by Uncle Crane?" Yu Jing asked in surprise.

Han Sen shrugged his shoulders. What could he say?

You look different from the stories I've heard, and your geno armament is strong," Yu Jing said.

"I see you are an Earl, so why are you calling Thousand Feather Crane an uncle?" Han Sen asked.

Yu Jing smiled. "Uncle Crane is a student of the tenth leader. I am the sixth elder's student's student. I'm more like a grandson, to be honest. At the very least, I should call him uncle."

After that, Yu Jing went on to say, "Han Sen, are you interested in co-operating with me?"

"No," Han Sen said immediately.

Yu Jing was disappointed. After a while, he said, "Don't you at least want to hear my proposal?"

"No thanks," Han Sen said. Then he walked towards the Jade Ants that were killed. He was going to collect their xenogeneic genes.

Yu Jing understood, but his face turned red. He couldn't keep himself from explaining, so he said, "Brother Han, it isn't like that! I can deal with Viscount Jade Ants. The reason I ran was because there is an Earl inside there, and it is a mutant ant queen. So, I had to run!"

"A mutant ant queen?" When Han Sen heard this, his eyes opened wide.

Han Sen had received Xuanyuan Dragon's xenogeneic gene, but he had been unable to absorb it. He wanted to understand what the difference between ordinary genes and mutated genes were. If he could get his hands on an Earl mutant gene, he might just be able to figure it out.

Yeah, I was unlucky! I found a jade fruit tree, and just as I was about to claim some jade fruit for myself, I was started to see a Jade Ant nest right next to it. I was unable to collect the fruit, and I almost died. I used everything I had—every item I owned—to keep myself alive. I lost everything on this excursion.” Yu Jing sighed.

And then, Yu Jing suddenly smiled at Han Sen. “Brother, I think you are so strong. You must be a hero! Why don’t you and I go collect the jade fruit and split the haul between us?”

“No offense, but why can’t I just go there by myself right now?” Han Sen smiled at Yu Jing.

Yu Jing smiled, but it quivered with a touch of nervousness. He responded, “Brother Han, you have only been in Sky Palace for a few days! You don’t know much about Xuanyuan Cave, do you? Although Xuanyuan Island does not look big from the outside, it is very large on the inside. Even if you were down here for a whole year, you wouldn’t be able to explore every nook and cranny of this realm. The cave system is complex, too, so you’d likely find yourself lost. Without me, it is highly unlikely that you’ll find the fruit within the next few months of searching. Do you really want to waste your time in such a fashion?”

“That makes sense. Okay, we’ll split the haul of fruit in half,” Han Sen said as he dug through the corpses of the Jade Ants.

The rocket had been too powerful, and the Jade Ants were only Viscounts. Most had been blown to smithereens, to such an extent that the xenogeneic genes were utterly annihilated. When he was done, Han Sen had only been able to collect a dozen xenogeneic genes.

Yu Jing was so happy to hear this, and he said, “Brother Han, you won’t regret cooperating with me! Can your geno armament destroy an Earl Jade Ant?”

Han Sen searched around for a few more Jade Ants that had not been destroyed, and then went in search for the jade fruit tree with Yu Jing.

Truthfully, Han Sen's goal in this venture was not anything that rested on the boughs of the tree. Any fruit he collected would be a decent bonus. What he wanted to do the most was kill that Jade Ant Queen.

Yu Jing was not lying. The jade fruit tree's location was well-hidden. They traversed a number of complex tunnels for over an hour before finding it. The tree was behind a hidden alcove and cave.

"Brother Han, do you see the rock beside the tree? That is the exit of the ant nest. If we get too close, the ants will come pouring out. I examined it earlier, and there were at least eight Earl Jade Ants. There was also an ant queen. What are you going to do?" Yu Jing looked worried. He was afraid Han Sen would back out.

"We have a deal, don't we? We split the haul of fruit in half, and the Jade Ant xenogeneic genes are for me," Han Sen said.

Yu Jing immediately said, "Yes. It does not matter who kills it; you can have the xenogeneic genes."

Yu Jing said that, but inside he thought, "The Mutant Jade Ant Queen? That thing is as strong as a Marquise. With seven or eight Earls alongside it, and the other ants too, I think you'll end up running off without laying claim to a single xenogeneic gene."

"Okay, that's the deal then. You go over there," Han Sen said coldly.

"I go? How?" Yu Jing asked with shock.

"Walk there. You can fly or crawl, if you so prefer. Just go over and draw those ants out." Han Sen smiled.

"Draw them out? Your plan is to draw them out, kill them, and collect the fruit?" Yu Jing looked at Han Sen queerly.

"Do you have a better idea?" Han Sen smiled at Yu Jing.

It was easy for Han Sen to collect jade fruit. With Han Sen's rabbit shoes, he could pick the tree clean before the ants even emerged.

But Han Sen wasn't there for just the fruit. Picking it and then leaving was not on the agenda.

Chapter 1979 - Crazy Killing

Chapter 1979 Crazy Killing

“Brother Han, are you really confident in this?” Yu Jing asked, staring at Han Sen.

“Yes,” Han Sen answered with certainty.

Yu Jing hesitated. He gritted his teeth, grabbed Han Sen’s hands, and said, “Brother Han, I place my life in these hands of yours. You have to be careful and see my safety is secured.”

“Go. I will have Spell fire when the time is right.” Han Sen patted Yu Jing on the shoulder and smiled.

Yu Jing ran towards the jade fruit tree. Before he could get close, ants began to pour out from under the rock. It was like a black river headed for him.

Yu Jing quickly came running back as Han Sen commanded Spell to ready a rocket. Then, she fired behind the man. Boom!

The white light exploded behind Yu Jing. It killed a lot of Jade Ants. Announcements kept running in Han Sen’s head, declaring he had killed a Viscount Jade Ant. He also heard himself receive a bunch of beast souls.

Han Sen had battled ants before, and he had always received armor beast souls. But these Jade Ants only gave him pet- type beast souls. That disappointed him quite a bit.

That was because pet-type beast souls were annoying. If you wanted to use them effectively, you’d have to get them to combat mode. He had found himself in possession of many low-tier pets in the past.

Jade Ants could spit corrosive gas, but the range was short and the gas was slow. Before the ants could get to Han Sen, Spell had fired two rockets and laid waste to them.

Suddenly, a few gold shadows emerged from the stone nest. These ants were twice as big as the ordinary ones. They had wings, and they glimmered with a golden light.

They flew straight at Yu Jing like shadows.

“Brother Han, help me!” Yu Jing shouted at Han Sen as he ran.

Seeing that seven or eight Earl class Jade Ants were about to catch up with Yu Jing, Han Sen realized that Spell’s rockets were going to be too slow. She had killed many Viscount ants, but more and more of them were approaching.

“Spell!” Han Sen took control of her, ditching the rocket launcher and pulling out the sniper rifle.

Spell lifted the sniper, aimed it above Yu Jing’s head, and pulled the trigger. A bullet of light was fired, and it struck one of the Earl ants.

That power tore through the ant’s wing and perforated its shell. It fell from the air.

“Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Jade Ant: xenogeneic gene found.”

The announcement played in Han Sen’s head. Yu Jing was approaching excitedly, saying, “Sh*t, Brother Han! Your geno armament is strong. Hurry! Fire a few more shots and finish them all off.”

One second later, Spell raised the rifle again and fired. Unfortunately, she missed this time. She failed to hit the Earl Jade Ant that was flying quickly towards her.

Yu Jing’s excited voice turned to one of crying. “Brother, can you aim better?”

Seeing Yu Jing draw even closer, Spell swapped her sniper for a pair of pistols. Then, she fired them into the sky.

A series of shots were heard. She missed a few times, but she still managed to hit two Earl Jade Ants. The pistols were not as powerful as the sniper, though, and the bullets only punched holes in the shells of the creatures. They didn't kill the ants.

"Spell!" Han Sen shouted. Spell ran towards Han Sen and turned into a pair of pistols that flew into Han Sen's own hands.

Han Sen's left and right hands clutched the Spell pistols. He fired them into the sky simultaneously. Each bullet came launching out with a stunning muzzle flash.

And again, there was a pang pang noise. Han Sen fired seven bullets, and all seven hit their desired target. Seven Earl ants were hit.

Han Sen's bullets were as strong as Spell's. The only difference was that Spell's bullets were fueled by the raw power of The Story of Genes, while Han Sen could create bullets from any geno art he possessed.

After the seventh shot, the seven Earl Jade Ants each had a bullet hole inside them. The wounds were not deadly, though, and the ants could still fight.

But they spiraled like planes losing control. They crashed into the ground and could not get airborne again. Small turtle symbols were glazed across each of them.

Han Sen's bullets were now powered by Turtle. It stopped the ants from flying, and it reduced their speed.

Han Sen kept firing his guns at the Earl ants on the floor. Their shells splintered and broke as their bodies oozed blood. Han Sen killed one ant immediately.

"Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Jade Ant: xenogeneic gene found."

"Shoot them! Shoot them!" Yu Jing shouted with excitement.

The Earl Jade Ants had been robbed of their ability to fly, and they were slowed dramatically. They were no longer a threat to Yu Jing.

Han Sen fell back, repeatedly squeezing the triggers. The joy of firing a gun was incomparable to the wielding of a knife.

Han Sen killed another Earl Jade Ant, and then there was a noise. A pure black ant flew out from under the stone, with a shell that was wreathed in golden symbols.

This ant was smaller than the Earls, but its presence was far scarier. It flapped its wings and flew towards Han Sen. Its claws were like blades, and they came swinging towards him.

The gold light came past Han Sen like a knifelight.

Han Sen moved and evaded the gold lights. Han Sen then fired his guns, but the Jade Ant Queen was too fast. It was able to dodge every bullet.

The ant queen rose into the air, shrieking. The gold symbols on the shell and wings glowed. Its speed and power were increasing, and it was going to attack Han Sen again.

“Run! This mutant ant queen is as strong as a Marquise. We cannot fight it!” Before Yu Jing could finish his warning,

Han Sen had drawn another weapon and gone running towards the ant queen.

The bullets could not catch up with the ant queen, but the rabbit shoes could. Han Sen rushed by the gold lights and used the Ghost Teeth Knife on the ant queen, breaking its shell and leaving a big mark on it. Blood came out, as did a plume of purple smoke.

Chapter 1980 - Killing Ant Queen

Chapter 1980: Killing Ant Queen

There was no need for Han Sen to fight anymore. The purple smoke was spreading quickly across the ant queen, ripping its wounds apart and sending blood spewing out of it like a burst dam.

Han Sen was too lazy to wait, though. He slashed again and cut the heavily-injured ant queen's head clean off.

“Mutant Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Jade Ant Queen: xenogeneic gene found.”

There was an announcement, and it made Han Sen very happy. “It really is a mutant xenogeneic!”

The Jade Ants did not back off just because the ant queen was killed. They all came rushing at Han Sen like kamikazes.

Han Sen gave Spell back her body, and she quickly got to firing rockets at the droves. Meanwhile, Han Sen went on to finish off the rest of the Earls himself.

After many more ants were killed, the rest decided to return to their abode below the stone.

Han Sen did not seek to pursue the fight. He harvested the bodies of the ant queen and the eight Earls. He also collected many Viscount xenogeneic genes.

Yu Jing saw Han Sen picking up all those xenogeneic genes and felt depressed. He had to comfort himself by saying, “It is lucky I can at least get half of those jade fruits. This guy is scary, and he is nothing like the stories people tell about him. He doesn't seem like the sort of fellow who would need to be carried into Sky Palace. I should have totally fought for a greater share of this haul.”

There were fourteen jade fruits on the tree. Han Sen and Yu Jing each took half. Han Sen received seven, and then he asked Yu Jing what benefit they could provide.

“Brother Han, how about we co-operate in Xuanyuan Cave and kill more xenogeneics together. We can split the gatherings in your favor, sixty-forty. I guess I could settle for seventy-thirty. Eighty-twenty is a possibility, too. You should think about it!”

Han Sen did not continue his hunt in Xuanyuan Cave. He took his spoils and left. He flew the legless crane back to his island.

Right then, he wanted to find out the purpose of mutant xenogeneic genes. He did not need to do any more hunting at this point.

He gave a few Viscount Jade Ant bodies to the legless crane. He didn't collect the xenogeneic genes inside the bodies, either. The crane was able to gobble them all up.

The legless crane happily swallowed the first, and it made a grateful noise to Han Sen as it ate.

Han Sen went to the stone house and pulled the bodies out. He cut open the ant queen's body and picked up a piece of flesh that looked like jade.

That meat was transparent, and not unlike shrimp. Something gold shone from it, and looking into the gold light, you could see it was the face of the ant queen.

“Earl Genes insufficient. Cannot refine mutant xenogeneic genes.”

As Han Sen held the ant queen's xenogeneic gene, he received the same announcement.

“I have nine Earl genes. And here there are eight Earl class Jade Ants. I don't know if that'll be enough.” Han Sen cut open the eight Earl ants and picked up the xenogeneic genes within.

Han Sen gave the ant queen's body, and the bodies of the others, to the legless crane for food. Bubble was Han Sen's only other companion right now, so there was nothing else he could feed.

Han Sen had an Earl pet beast soul and seven Viscount beast souls, but he did not fancy feeding them at all. Having a pet in Sky Palace would not be something you could easily hide. If others discovered that he possessed one, explaining that might be difficult.

Jade Ant xenogeneic genes were like a fist-sized cut of meat. After Han Sen melted them down, it was like a barbecue. The oil sizzled, and he sprinkled it with salt and pepper. It tasted better than barbecued lamb.

“Earl Genes +1”

After eating a piece of the ant meat, Han Sen felt very alive. He was energized, and he felt as if he could have sex ten times in one night.

After eating four pieces of that meat, his belly was bloated. The meal was very filling.

Han Sen did not want to wait before eating the rest, though, so he switched on Consume and quickly digested the ants that were in his stomach. By the time he was done, he had finished all eight slabs of ant meat.

In total, Han Sen now had seventeen Earl genes. But when he picked up the ant queen's mutant genes, it still said he did not have enough Earl genes.

“How many Earl genes do I need? I can't figure out the number.” Han Sen felt depressed, but it was almost time for White Jade Jing to open again. He did not have time to venture into the cave just yet, so he'd think about what to do once he returned from White Jade Jing.

Practicing in White Jade Jing was the most important thing he could do right now. He had three geno arts that needed to play catch-up and reach Earl status, so White Jade Jing was very important. It was why Yisha had sent him here, after all.

Of course, Yisha had sent him there only intending for him to level up The Story of Genes to Earl status. And that was something he had already accomplished.

“Han Sen, are you here?” The day White Jade Jing opened, someone was calling for Han Sen before he had woken up.

The voice was Yun Suyi’s. Han Sen went to brush his teeth, then opened the door. Yun Suyi was wearing a white dress, and she was standing just outside the door. The cut of the dress showed off her attractive legs.

“White Jade Jing is opening today. Let’s go.” Yun Suyi blinked at Han Sen.

Yeah,” Han Sen answered. He turned to wake up the legless crane that was snoozing beneath the tree.

“Let’s take my Jade Wing Tiger. It is faster,” Yun Suyi said.

“Sure.” Han Sen nodded, letting the legless crane continue to sleep.

Han Sen sat behind her, and the Jade Wing Tiger flew towards White Jade Jing.

“Han Sen, you are a student of Knife Queen. You must surely know many knife skills. I’ve learned a few, but I fear there is something amiss. If you ever have the time, could you teach me a thing or two?” Yun Suyi turned around and smiled at Han Sen.

“I can’t teach you, but we can practice together,” Han Sen said.

“Okay, then. After White Jade Jing closes, I will take you over to my place.” Yun Suyi smiled in a flirty way.

Han Sen and Yun Suyi went to the White Jade Building, and they split up when they reached the fourth floor. Yun Suyi said she’d wait for Han Sen.

This time, Han Sen stopped on the sixth floor. He had decided to practice there this time. He had to practice his other geno arts, and he did not know if his body could withstand the Jade Air of the seventh floor without using Petrify.

But the sixth floor was full of students. It filled up soon after, and people were everywhere.

“Brother Han, you are here!” Yu Jing walked in and saw Han Sen, then went over to sit down beside him.

Chapter 1981 - Jade Building Strange Scene

Chapter 1981: Jade Building Strange Scene

Han Sen wanted to sit by himself, but he didn't seem to have that option. People were everywhere on the sixth floor.

Fortunately, Yu Jing did not mention anything about them killing xenogeneics together. He quietly asked, "Brother Han, will you participate in Sky Palace's exam?"

"What exam?" Han Sen asked. This wasn't high school, so what exam could there be?

"The exam is annual. There are no penalties to failing, but if you do well, the elders and the leaders might take notice of you. If you reach the top three, you also earn a prize. If you receive a good score, the elder might take you as a student, even though you are an outsider. But of course, you are already Knife Queen's student, but the top three rewards are still great."

"What are the rewards?" Han Sen asked.

"Treasure is granted to the top three. If you are number one, you will also have permission to enter the Holy House. There, you may select a geno art. Such a thing would be of great benefit," Yu Jing said.

Han Sen, hearing that, was quickly disinterested. He still had his own geno arts to practice with. Even if the Sky Palace geno arts were powerful, he doubted he'd find the time to learn one of them.

Yu Jing noticed Han Sen was not interested, and so he looked around and whispered to Han Sen, "Brother Han, if you have time, I would like to talk to you about the exam. Alone. Perhaps we can co-operate there."

Han Sen looked at Yu Jing, and Yu Jing performed a gesture to be quiet. Han Sen realized that Yu Jing must be asking him to cheat in some way. Of course, no one else could hear that.

And then Yu Jing spoke to Han Sen again. This time, he did not want to discuss the exam. White Jade Jing opened and Jade Air came out of the Jade Wall. When it did, everyone focused on refining it.

Han Sen used Jadeskin to absorb the Jade Air. They both possessed the same jade word, so perhaps they might have some compatibility.

When Han Sen used Jadeskin, the Jade Air moved quickly throughout his body. Jadeskin absorbed the air quickly, much faster than The Story of Genes.

“D*mn! They really are connected!” Han Sen thought.

Han Sen changed to the Dongxuan Sutra, then the Blood-Pulse Sutra, and he noticed that they refined the Jade Air much more slowly than The Story of Genes did. And they were far inferior to Jadeskin.

“It looks like I need to practice Jadeskin first.” Han Sen stopped wasting time and focused on practicing with Jadeskin.

He wanted to evolve with that, first and foremost.

Jade Air was everywhere, but it wasn't dense enough. Han Sen's absorption speed was fast, but Jadeskin's evolution was not going great. He realized that the Galaxy Sand had been far superior.

Before the second Jade Air erupted, Han Sen went up to the seventh floor. His Jadeskin was compatible with the Jade Air, so he knew he could survive on the seventh floor with it.

But when he reached the seventh floor, he did not see Thousand Feather Crane or Yun Sushang. Not even First Day was there.

There was a young, lonely guy there on the seventh floor, though. A jade sword rested on his knees.

The man did not look at Han Sen. He just sat where he was, eyes closed, uncaring for the world around him. Han Sen was not a fan of talking, either, so he found a corner to sit in and waited for the second wave.

The Jade Air on the seventh floor was far purer than the Jade Air on the sixth floor. It was better for his Jadeskin.

No others had come to the seventh floor, so the environment satisfied Han Sen a great deal. It was far better than the over-crowded sixth floor. He thought to himself, "If I had known I could survive it, I would have come here the first time it erupted."

Han Sen waited for the second eruption, and when it came, he cast Jadeskin and absorbed the Jade Air.

The Jade Air on the seventh floor was far denser than the lower floors. Han Sen felt the Jade Air flow inside him, and it helped refine his Jadeskin and infuse it with his bones. It made Han Sen feel like jade himself.

There were some amazing feelings going on in Han Sen's skeleton. Rather than giving him the chills, the scary Jade Air actually made him feel hot. It felt like he was inside an oven, and his bones were being baked.

Han Sen knew that this was just an illusion, though. And that was because the Jade Air did not suppress him. It made him feel more alive.

Han Sen practiced Jadeskin, and not long after, his Jadeskin began to feel strange. It became purer.

This was exactly what Han Sen had hoped for. Without thinking, Han Sen cast Jadeskin.

But on the seventh floor, an odd image appeared on the smooth Jade Wall. The sun and the moon appeared in the image, and white bones as well. Sword air cut through them.

It was like a god appearing in the sky.

Buildings rose up, like steps into the sky.

Between the clouds was a mysterious city. It was very well hidden, and you could not see much.

All those images appeared across the Jade Walls, and they made the Jade Air purer.

The arrogant young Sky man opened his eyes. His eyes shone as he looked upon the Jade Wall. He looked shocked.

The Jade Wall's image started to change, and the city there grew closer. There was a king obeying the city.

He took a step, then knelt. Ten steps, then he prostrated himself. It was like a believer, walking to a holy place.

When the arrogant young man saw that the Jade Wall was showing the city, and the city was revealed from behind the clouds, his face changed.

“Five cities?” The arrogant young man's eyes looked bright. He stared at the five cities the wall displayed.

Many kings bowed before the cities, but none dared to step in. It was not clear what happened after that, though. The kings that were nearest to the city were dying, and they soon disappeared.

The gates of the five mysterious cities remained closed. It was like they had been closed since ancient times.

Chapter 1982 - Under the Sky

Chapter 1982 Under the Sky

Han Sen felt that the Jade Air had become very pure. It allowed his Jadeskin to ascend in level very quickly. But the Jade Air's time of eruption was far too short for satisfaction. When the Jade Air dispersed, Han Sen wanted more.

"What is your name?" Han Sen opened his eyes and saw the arrogant man looking at him. His voice sounded cold.

"Han Sen. What is your name? And do you want something?" Han Sen asked.

"Are you taking part in the exam this year?" The man did not answer Han Sen's question, and just asked his own again. Han Sen thought the man was quite strange, so he willingly answered. "I don't know. Maybe. Maybe not."

"Oh." The man looked at Han Sen and then left, headed downstairs.

"Is he crazy?" Han Sen shrugged his shoulders, then went downstairs as well.

When Han Sen reached the sixth floor, the man had vanished. He saw Yu Jing looking around, however. Yu Jing approached Han Sen as soon as his eyes found him.

"Han Sen, are you free? Can we talk?" Yu Jing said.

"I don't think so; I have something to do. Come over to my place tonight," Han Sen said, recalling that he was supposed to meet up with Yun Suyi.

"Okay," Yu Jing agreed, then walked downstairs with Han Sen.

When they reached the fourth floor, Yun Suyi was waiting there for Han Sen. She smiled at him.

“Brother Han is meeting up with a woman? It is best that I leave!” Yu Jing saw Yun Suyi, smiled back, and then said goodbye.

“Why are you with him?” Yun Suyi asked, frowning.

“Why? Is there a problem?” Han Sen asked with confusion. She looked as if matters with Yu Jing weren’t so simple.

“That guy is greedy. He plays tricks, and he cheats. He does not have a very good reputation in Sky Palace. I recommend staying away from him, if you can.” Yun Suyi told Han Sen some stories about things he had done.

Yun Suyi then brought Han Sen over to her island. Her island was far bigger than his. She had a pavilion, and even a garden with a fountain. It was quite a comfy place, really.

“Here, then. Help me examine this skill. Which part of it is incorrect? I always feel as if there is something amiss with it.” Yun Suyi brought Han Sen into a pavilion in the garden. She invited Han Sen to sit down and drink some tea.

Han Sen answered, “Show me the knifeskill, and I’ll see if I can identify the issue.”

Yun Suyi nodded. Her beautiful body walked to the fields. She pulled out a knife and began her performance.

Han Sen watched her and frowned. Yun Suyi hadn’t been practicing the skill for very long, so she wasn’t experienced at all. If there was a problem, it would be because of her lack of practice. She could not even be considered a beginner with the skill.

Han Sen realized that she had not used a knife before, so she did not have much in the way of knifeskills. It was clear to him that she had only started practicing this as a way to talk to Han Sen. It was an excuse.

Yun Suyi had not just selected a random skill to trick Han Sen, though. It’d have been too obvious if she had done that.

The knifeskill she had selected was called “Under the Sky.” It was created by a Sky Palace swordsman. He wanted to create a knifeskill for Sky Palace, but in the end, there were seven problems he was unable to solve. That was why he called the knifeskill Under the Sky, because it was not on the level expected of the Sky.

Many people wanted to modify Under the Sky. The seven little issues had been fixed over the years by a series of genius students, but there was still one problem no one could overcome. Because of that, they were unable to make it a Sky Palace skill.

Yun Suyi selected this skill in the hope that Han Sen could identify the issue that was thus far unfixable. If she did that, it’d work as an icebreaker, allowing her to get closer to him. If she had to keep looking him up all the time, with no real reason, her feelings would be revealed.

Han Sen could tell Suyi had just started practicing with a knife, but he was still fascinated by the knifeskill. It was amazing in its own right, and it was vastly different from Teeth Knife.

Han Sen thought the knifeskill had the same potential as Teeth Knife, but when Suyi performed it, there was clearly a problem with it. And also, the power in the example was quite weak.

It was just one little problem, but it detracted so much from the technique. The resolution of a battle between two elites rested on the smallest details, so the slightest edge could make the difference between life and death.

“Han Sen, can you tell that there is a problem with this skill? I feel as if something is wrong.” After Yun Suyi practiced, she returned to the pavilion and consulted Han Sen.

Because Under the Sky was still not perfect, Sky Palace did not really allow its students to practice it. Only a select few had knowledge of the skill’s existence. She knew Han Sen had never seen the skill before, and so that was why she chose to use it.

But even if the skill was perfected, it wouldn't be made available to all students. Most people would only hear the name.

Han Sen didn't think much about it. He just believed Yun Suyi had yet to practice it right, and that was why there was an issue. He didn't think there was an issue with the knifeskill itself.

"This technique is very complicated, so I don't understand it yet. Could you perform it again for me?" Han Sen did not ask to see the scroll.

The skill was Teeth Knife's equal, so it was unlikely many students had what it took to practice with it. He was just an outsider, so asking to read the actual geno art could have been very rude.

Yun Suyi merrily agreed to perform Under the Sky again.

"There are some problems, certainly, but I don't really understand them. I'll think it over when I head back." Han Sen did not focus on the use of knives, so he wasn't a knife master. He could not promise that he would fix the problem.

But there were some common aspects threading every skill, and Han Sen had a great deal of knowledge and experience. So, he planned on trying to solve it. Tackling the problem would be good for his own knife practice, regardless of whether he succeeded or failed.

After all, Han Sen used knives more than any other weapon these days. And he had Ghost Teeth Knife, which was a King weapon. He wanted more knife skills.

"Yes, please." Yun Suyi smiled and took Han Sen back. She planned to use this excuse to talk to Han Sen about knifeskills again. She wanted to get closer to him.

When Yun Suyi returned home from taking Han Sen back to his island, Yun Sushang appeared in her garden.

"Suyi, what have you done?"

“Nothing. I had a problem with a skill, so I asked Han Sen for help. I took him home right after.” Yun Suyi acted as if she did not care.

Yun Sushang looked at Yun Suyi and said, “The problem with Under the Sky cannot be fixed through simple observation. If he can do that, then the elders wasted their lives in what they have done.”

Yun Suyi blushed, and she said, “Sister, why are you spying on our conversations?”

“Suyi, do not forget your identity. You should know what you can do and what you cannot. There is a line. Han Sen is not of the Sky. Wanting something impossible will just get someone hurt.” Yun Sushang sighed.

Chapter 1983 - Misunderstanding

Chapter 1983 Misunderstanding

After Han Sen returned to the island, he saw his legless crane resting beneath the tree. He put some meat in its bowl, then went into the house to practice Under the Sky.

Under the Sky was very delicate. The technique did not have much flair, and it wasn't overbearing, like Teeth Knife. But when you used the skill, it was like a rippling ribbon that could not be cut. The knifeskills looked random, but they were all connected.

It could trap an enemy without them noticing. With it, Han Sen might even be able to control the enemy as if they were a puppet. Under the Sky was not too dissimilar to Heavenly Go or the Dongxuan Sutra. It was still quite unique, of course.

Heavenly Go focused on one's formation. The Dongxuan Sutra was excellent when it came to prediction. Under the Sky focused on direct control.

Under the Sky made one a queen amongst ants, allowing the user to rule the battlefield. Whoever made that knifeskill, to have given it a name like that, must have been thinking of this.

But there was a problem with the knifeskill which reduced its effectiveness significantly. In order to properly control the enemy, the skill had to view them as nothing. And that was where the problem began.

When Han Sen watched Yun Suyi make use of it, he could tell where the technique had originated; it had to have stemmed from Sky Palace.

Han Sen had guessed correctly. Sky Palace had Outer Sky powers, and it came from the Textless Book.

The person that created Under the Sky had practiced with the Textless Book. He used that as a basis, and with his knowledge and talent, he formulated the rest of the knifeskill.

Understanding the Textless Book wasn't necessary to practice Under the Sky, though. If it was, then what was the point? Very few could actually practice with the Textless Book, after all.

Because of this, the skill lacked the Textless Book's power as a base, and the control power was quite weak. It wasn't the best.

It created a dual-sided problem: people who couldn't practice the Textless Book also couldn't learn this knifeskill to its true potential, but people who could practice the Textless Book didn't need to learn this skill. It was a bit of a shame.

Under the Sky had been abandoned because no one had found a way to overcome this problem. The modifications of a number of geniuses weren't even enough.

Han Sen wasn't very good at knifeskills, but it just so happened that Under the Sky's problem was something Han Sen was very familiar with.

He had allowed the Outer Sky powers to enter his body on the Road to the Sky. The forces that he felt impressed him greatly. Added to that, he was proficient with the Dongxuan Sutra and Heavenly Go. Thus, fixing the issue would not be too difficult for him.

But Han Sen had only observed the knifeskill. He didn't have the scroll, so he couldn't learn it properly and apply his solution to the matter. After thinking it through, Han Sen decided to give Yun Suyi a call. He asked if outsiders were allowed to learn Under the Sky, but she said no.

It was a flawed knifeskill, but it was connected to the Textless Book. Therefore, not just anyone could come and learn it. Yun Suyi was allowed to learn it because the skill was originally created by the Yun family. She could study it herself, but she could not pass it on to others.

Han Sen was disappointed. He had agreed to help her because he thought the skill would suit him. He wanted to learn it himself.

Han Sen was disappointed he was not able to learn the skill. He apologized to Yun Suyi and told her he could not fix it by merely watching.

That night, Yu Jing came to meet with Han Sen.

“Brother Yu, speak your mind.” Han Sen had learned quite a bit about Yu Jing from Yun Suyi. He did not harbor any prejudice against the man, though, so he treated him like a normal person.

Yu Jing checked to see if they were truly alone, and he said, “Brother Han, if you do not care for the rewards of the exam, how about you help me out? With your power, you can surely win first place. If you can help me, I can provide you a reward that is worth even more.”

“Are you saying you want me to cheat?” Han Sen understood what he was getting at.

“Haha! I’m only talking about helping each other get what we both want.” Yu Jing laughed.

Han Sen suddenly thought of something, and so he told Yu Jing, “I am afraid I am unable to help you. I will be taking part in the exam.”

“That’s okay. But if you change your mind, you can always call me.” Yu Jing was visibly disappointed, but he did not say anything about it.

After he left, Han Sen called Yun Suyi and asked, “Suyi, is Under the Sky in the Holy House?”

There is a copy in there, yes. Why? What do you want?” Yun Suyi asked with surprise.

“If I get first place in the exam, I can ask for Under the Sky as a reward, yes?” Han Sen asked.

“That is correct.” After saying that, Yun Suyi thought of something and blushed.

“I see. Okay, then!” Han Sen hung up. Yun Suyi had confirmed his guess, so he was going to join the exam and see if he could nab first place. If he was able to, he’d pick Under the Sky.

Yun Suyi was still holding the phone, deep in thought. Her cheeks were red, and she smiled and thought to herself, “Is he going to the exam because of me? All to get Under the Sky?”

There were still two weeks to go before the exam. White Jade Jing opened again the following week, and Han Sen had plans to slay a few more Earl xenogeneics to level up his gene tally. He still wanted to learn the truth about mutant genes.

Han Sen did not plan to go to Xuanyuan Cave this time, as that place was far too complicated. There were too many Xuan Jade Spirits around, and they were tough to kill.

Han Sen got his hands on a Sky Palace map, and he looked over places he could go to hunt xenogeneics. After a time of deliberation, he decided on going to Old Night Island.

Old Night Island’s xenogeneics were fast, and most of them could fly. Earls did not like going there, as it was difficult to slay the inhabitants of that island.

Han Sen, however, was not afraid. No matter what happened, his rabbit shoes and his dragon wings could give him the speed he needed. Catching an Earl would not be difficult, either.

After Yu Jing confirmed Han Sen’s participation in the exam, a new thought came to him.

“There aren’t many special people in this year’s exam. With Han Sen’s power, he can get into the top five with ease. I can take advantage of that. His reputation is weak, and so people don’t know his true strength. I can earn money through this.” Yu Jing concocted a long scheme.

Chapter 1984 - Xenogeneic Geno Ar

Chapter 1984 Xenogeneic Geno Ar

Old Night Island was very big. There were mountains, forests, and even oceans. Han Sen went there and chased a flying bird. He caught up with it and cut its head off.

“Xenogeneic Earl hunted. Forest Bird: xenogeneic gene found.”

Han Sen collected the xenogeneic gene from the corpse, then started a fire. He immediately got to eating.

The legless crane flapped its wings, having brought over a few branches. Bubble was hopping all over Han Sen. It was weak, so it couldn't help much.

“With this Forest Bird, that marks the eighth Earl in four days. This is no faster than going into the Xuanyuan Cave.” Han Sen felt terrible.

Old Night Island was not as good as Han Sen thought it would be, and the xenogeneics he managed to find were fast. The place was so large that it took a long time just to find a single Earl. Han Sen felt as if his plan had completely failed.

Han Sen gave the bird's body to the legless crane, and he cooked the xenogeneic gene. It was a liver this time. It tasted lovely, and it had a pleasant aroma, too.

“Earl Gene +1”

After eating the whole liver, Han Sen's Earl gene tally reached twenty-five.

Han Sen brought out the ant queen's mutant gene. He was used to hearing the announcement saying he did not have enough genes yet.

But this time, Han Sen did not hear that wretched announcement.

“Do I have enough Earl genes now?” Han Sen grinned widely. He quickly started trying to cook the ant queen’s gene in the pot.

Han Sen hadn’t been able to cook the ant queen’s meat before, but now it was boiling. It made Han Sen very happy. After a while, the ant queen’s meat was cooked. Han Sen ate it, and he felt a power course through him.

After Han Sen ate all the meat, he did not hear any of his genes increase. He looked at his stats, and it still said he had twenty-five Earl genes in total. Eating the ant queen did not seem to have increased anything.

But the power of the ant queen’s meat was now inside Han Sen. It wasn’t refined, and it was coursing through Han Sen’s vessels. The power kept traveling through him, until eventually it waned and disappeared.

In Han Sen’s head, a shocking announcement played.

“Earl class xenogeneic geno art obtained: Ant Queen Mark”

“Mutant genes don’t actually increase genes? They give geno arts instead?” Han Sen thought to himself. And then, he followed the path the powers had taken through his body. It was then that he discovered a gold symbol on his body.

Han Sen had seen this gold shape on the ant queen’s body. When this spell began to glow, the creature’s power increased. Han Sen tested it out. Lo and behold, the ant queen’s mark was very effective. It made Earls as strong as Marquises.

That meant the ant queen’s geno art did not need to be practiced, and despite that, Han Sen could be as strong as the creature had been.

Han Sen was so happy. If he found any more mutant genes, he could get the geno arts from the mutant xenogeneics he defeated in battle. He wouldn’t even have to practice with them to become as proficient as possible.

The strongest thing about this new option was that the geno arts came from creatures of a different species. Ordinary people could not learn xenogeneic geno arts. That was what was so special about them.

Even though Han Sen could simulate power with his Dongxuan Sutra, he could only replicate a fraction of their abilities. That was because their bodies were different, so fully accurate simulation was impossible.

It was just like Consume; if Han Sen hadn't turned into an ant, he wouldn't have been able to learn the ability.

And Han Sen had still needed to practice Consume. Now he only needed a mutant gene to learn the geno art of a xenogeneic. And because he did not need to practice with it, that made things even better.

"If I can kill a King class or deified mutant xenogeneic, does that mean I can learn the skills right away?" Han Sen thought this could be tremendously powerful.

But the Xuanyuan mutant dragon's xenogeneic genes were Marquise class. He needed to refine Marquise genes before he could do anything with that one. For the time being, he could not make use of it.

There was still a while to go before White Jade Jing opened. Han Sen planned to keep killing xenogeneics to earn Earl genes. If he met a mutant xenogeneic, he might learn another xenogeneic geno art.

"Yu Jing, you really won't regret this?" A group of Sky men surrounded him, and they looked surprised.

"I won't," Yu Jing said with certainty.

"Good. If you wish to give us your money, we won't refuse. According to our struck deal just now: if Han Sen can win ten times in a row in the exam, we lose. If he loses just once, then we get all your money." A Sky man laughed.

Many students of Sky Palace struck this deal with Yu Jing. One of them laughed and said, “Yu Jing, you are bringing this upon yourself. Do not take it out on us if you lose everything.”

“That Han Sen had to be carried up the Road to the Sky. If he can win ten times, that means all our Earl brothers are rubbish.”

Someone patted Yu Jing on the shoulder and smiled. “Thanks. If you have any more great deals to strike, you should seek me out.”

Yu Jing coldly laughed in his heart. “It’s only ten rounds. Unless Han Sen is unlucky enough to face-off against a strong enemy in the beginning, he should be able to reach the top five with ease. Especially with his power. Getting into the top hundred will be nothing.”

But Yu Jing still felt nervous in his heart. This was a very big bet to make. While it was a high risk, there was also a high reward. Winning the gambit meant he would end up with ten times his total wealth.

If he lost, though, he’d go bankrupt.

Yu Jing knew Han Sen was strong, but he was still nervous. When the exam matchups were settled, he took a look at Han Sen’s schedule to see who he’d go up against.

When he looked at the schedule, Yu Jing froze. His face grew pale. There was no color in him, at all, and he almost passed out.

The few Sky that had made a bet with him approached. They looked rather cocky. The leader smiled, touched him on the shoulder, and said, “Yu Jing, you are unlucky. That monster Bamboo is taking part in the exam. And he is Han Sen’s sixth enemy. You are very unlucky. I don’t think God can save you now. Pack up your stuff, we’ll be repoing everything you own soon enough.”

The group of Sky smiled before taking their leave. Yu Jing was still standing there, pale as a g. He wanted to die.

Chapter 1985 - Lone Bamboo

Chapter 1985 Lone Bamboo

“Why would this happen? Why would Lone Bamboo take part in the exam? He doesn’t need to.” Yu Jing did not understand how he could be so unlucky. If it was any other Earl student, he believed Han Sen stood a firm chance. He would have had a high probability of winning.

But Lone Bamboo made Yu Jing feel powerless and hopeless.

Lone Bamboo was a student of the seventh elder, but he had broken a rule. It was a very bad one to break, too. He was stripped of his title as a student and imprisoned. There, he was tortured.

His imprisonment was not a death sentence, but it might as well have been on one.

Lone Bamboo was put in a sad dream. That dream kept repeating his sad life for ten thousand years. Once that time passed, he was allowed to wake up.

Ordinary creatures wouldn’t live long enough to wake up and have the dreams end. Even if they did, having the same heartbreaking dream repeat for ten millennia would be too much. They’d be driven insane by the repetition.

Lone Bamboo slept in jail for ten years before waking up. After he woke up, he went up to Sky Palace and knelt before it. Then, the doors opened. The leader had not accepted a student for one thousand years, but he decided to accept Lone Bamboo. Then, his cheating life started. He practiced with the Textless Book, and he was able to go to the five cities and twelve buildings. No one was as good as him.

Even Thousand Feather Crane, who received the holy gourd’s blessing, still lost against him. And he lost even after using his best sword skills.

After that, no one fought against Lone Bamboo. Marquises and Dukes would not underestimate him, either. No one could imagine how he had managed to wake up after only ten years. But even so, it was difficult to imagine what he might have been through.

The leader of Sky Palace said Lone Bamboo could become deified. He did not express any doubt about the possibility, and so he obviously had faith in him.

If the word strong was used to describe a student of Sky Palace, people would not think of the elders. Instead, they'd think of Lone Bamboo.

Lone Bamboo still wasn't a Marquise yet, but he never took part in the exams. Even the Marquise class students could not interest him. He had no interest in fighting them.

Yu Jing looked shocked and bitter. He felt unlucky. He thought he could get rich, but now he was going to be bankrupt. The students had not seen Lone Bamboo fight for the past few years, so no one had expected him to suddenly join the exam.

Han Sen stayed on Old Night Island for six days. He killed eleven Earl xenogeneics. But White Jade Jing was almost ready to open, so he left the island and went there. When he arrived on the island, Han Sen took a good look at the White Jade Building. After doing so, he was shocked.

He thought he'd only be able to see the one White Jade Building, but now, there were twelve such constructs on the island. At the end of the buildings, between the clouds, were cities. He could not see what resided in them, but he could most certainly see the five cities.

Han Sen was not as clueless as he had been when he first arrived there. He understood much about the White Jade Jing now.

Normal Sky Palace students could see seven White Jade Buildings—assuming they understood a bit about it all. If they could see ten, they'd be regarded as geniuses.

If they could see twelve, they'd be the smartest of the entire generation. If they could see all the buildings, that was something that only occurred once every ten thousand years.

Sky Palace had existed for a billion years, and fewer than one hundred had seen all five cities. That was how profound this was.

Han Sen didn't feel anything, though. He did not know how he could see twelve buildings and five cities. He was quite confused. But when he practiced in the White Jade Building's seventh floor, he understood something when the Jade Air turned pure.

Although he could see twelve buildings, he was still planning on going to the first building to absorb the Jade Air. That place was perfect for an Earl, he believed. He planned to bring Jadeskin up to Earl before exploring the buildings beyond.

When Han Sen reached the fourth floor, Yun Suyi came straight to him to talk. She looked worried.

"Han Sen! My sister and Uncle Crane are waiting for you on the seventh floor. They wanted me to tell you that, if you came, you should go and see them. Even if you aren't planning on practicing on the seventh floor, go and see them."

"What is it?" Han Sen asked with confusion.

"The Jade Air is going to start, so go to the seventh floor! When it ends, Brother Crane will tell you the details," Yun Suyi said.

"Okay." Han Sen nodded and went straight up to the seventh floor.

When Han Sen disappeared up the stairs, Yun Suyi sighed and thought to herself, "God is being unfair. Why would you have to meet Lone Bamboo? What is Lone Bamboo thinking? What is the point of him joining the exam?"

But quickly, Yun Suyi thought, "But maybe that's okay! It's the thought that counts. It does not matter if you don't reach first place to get Under the Sky. I won't think any less of you."

Han Sen reached the seventh floor, and there, he saw Thousand Feather Crane, Yun Sushang, and First Day. The arrogant young man was not there on this day, though.

Seeing Han Sen there, Thousand Feather Crane invited him over. He asked, "Are you joining the exam?"

Han Sen nodded and said, "I signed up. I'm planning on joining."

Thousand Feather Crane had a wry smile, and he said, "I'm afraid you will have a tough fight ahead of you."

"What is it? Is someone big joining?" Han Sen asked with a smile.

Thousand Feather Crane told him that Lone Bamboo was taking part, and then he explained Lone Bamboo's story. He also told Han Sen about the time he was beaten by Lone Bamboo. He didn't hide anything.

But the way he said it was different than the way you would describe an ordinary student. Thousand Feather Crane talked about Lone Bamboo as if his strength was already legendary.

"Perhaps you won't believe all this, but when I fought Lone Bamboo, I felt as if I was going to lose by just standing in front of him. When I fought him for a while, it felt as if he was teaching me something. After that fight, my sword skills improved. And I was able to achieve what I have up to this point," Thousand Feather Crane said.

Chapter 1986 - Red Coral

Chapter 1986 Red Coral

Thousand Feather Crane started to say something more, but the Jade Air erupted. The four of them focused on absorbing the Jade Air, which had become unusually strong around Han Sen. The Jade Air eventually turned back to normal, and there was no more pure Jade Air to take in. Han Sen was more sure about his line of thinking now.

When the first Jade Air ended, Yun Suyi came up to the seventh floor. There, they all discussed the exam and the unexpected entrance of Lone Bamboo.

“On your sixth fight, you will encounter Lone Bamboo. That will be a hard fight. I am worried for you, but I will admit I am looking forward to witnessing it. If you are going to fight, I am going to watch.” Thousand Feather Crane smiled.

“I agree with what Brother Crane says,” First Day said, while clasping his hands together.

Han Sen curiously asked, “What did Lone Bamboo do to suffer the nightmarish trial of torture?”

Han Sen knew that torture like that was worse than being killed. It was a miracle that Lone Bamboo was able to wake up in ten years. That was something that had never happened in Sky Palace before.

Nightmare was a deified xenogeneic dream beast power. Ordinary people could not resist it, especially after they had experienced the nightmares for a while.

“The elders do not talk about it. They avoid the subject. We can’t say for sure what happened. We only know that he broke the rules,” Yun Sushang said.

After talking for a while, Han Sen only heard the words strong and very strong. He also heard the words extremely strong. But that wasn’t very useful.

So, Han Sen did not keep any of that in mind. He did not think he was invincible, but weak or strong, he'd have to engage the man in battle if he was to find out. There was no point wasting any more time thinking about it.

When the second Jade Air came, Yun Suyi went back to the fourth floor. On the seventh floor, Han Sen absorbed the second deluge of Jade Air. He thought his Jadeskin was coming along quickly. After ten more rounds of Jade Air, he imagined he could bring it up to Earl class.

It was a shame that the Jade Air only happened twice a week. It wasn't a process he could rush.

After counting the time, he realized it would take two or three months. Going from Viscount to Earl that fast would be something of a miracle for most people.

After leaving White Jade Jing, Han Sen went to Old Night Island to resume hunting. He didn't care about anything else right now. Getting more genes and leveling up was better than anything else he could do.

There was only a week left before the exam, though. There was not much time, and Han Sen wanted to max out his Earl genes before attending the exams.

Just as Han Sen was preparing to take the legless crane to the island, Yun Suyi jogged over to him.

"Han Sen, are you going back to Little Jade Island?"

"I am going to Old Night Island to hunt xenogeneics," Han Sen answered.

"Can you take me there? It doesn't sound as dangerous as Xuanyuan Cave, and I am sure I can protect myself. I won't take the loot, but I would certainly like to accompany you," Yun Suyi said.

Han Sen agreed. Old Night Island wasn't too dangerous, and if she wasn't going to take any loot, bringing her along would do no harm.

Seeing Han Sen agree, she looked visibly delighted. She smiled and said, "Old Night Island does not permit Earl class mounts, so I won't be riding Jade Wing Tiger. Can I ride atop your Jade Night Crane?"

"He is strong. Two people can sit on him, sure. He is just a little slow." Han Sen smiled.

"It is okay to be slow." Yun Suyi blinked.

When the legless crane took off, Han Sen hopped onto its back. Yun Suyi followed.

The legless crane had limited space atop its back. They sat together, shoulders touching shoulders. It made Yun Suyi blush.

One crane and two people disappeared into the clouds.

The legless crane flew a few hundred miles inland once they reached the island. And despite all the time it took, they were unable to locate an Earl xenogeneic. Han Sen missed Little Uncle at times like this. If he was there, they wouldn't have to go out in search of the xenogeneics. The xenogeneics would come out in search of them.

While they were looking for xenogeneics, something shone atop a mountain. Han Sen quickly went there with Yun Suyi. The mountain was like a sword, raised eight hundred meters into the sky. There were some red coral plants growing across it.

The light they saw was the glittering of those plants.

When Yun Suyi saw the plants, she looked to be in shock. She said, "This is an Earl class xenogeneic plant. It is called Blood Coral. Xenogeneics love to eat this, as it is great for their evolution. They are eaten when they grow to the size of a hand. This one on the peak is three meters tall, and yet it hasn't been eaten by a xenogeneic. That is strange."

Han Sen looked at the red coral and said, “Ah. That’s why it hasn’t been eaten. There is a strong xenogeneic that owns it, and so all the other xenogeneics don’t dare come close.”

“I don’t see any xenogeneics around.” Yun Suyi looked around to confirm, but she still saw nothing. It was so quiet around, and there were no weak xenogeneics, either.

Han Sen pointed at the red coral and said, “Look at the red coral. It is there.”

Yun Suyi followed Han Sen’s finger. She looked, and then saw a stick. It was not really a stick, though. It was a red bug that blended into the red coral. It was similar to a mantis, and it was munching on the red coral.

“It is an Earl class Blood God Mantis. It is one foot long, so it isn’t physically large. But it is very strong for an Earl class foe.” As she spoke, Yun Suyi’s face changed. “I know! This mantis is guarding this red coral because he wants to use its power to evolve. He doesn’t want to be a Marquis; he wants to be a mutant. Kill it before it eats the red coral!”

Han Sen was very pleased to hear that, so he smiled and said, “If it wants to evolve, then let it.”

Yun Suyi wished to say something, but seeing Han Sen smile was comforting. She felt safe. She couldn’t bring herself to say anything. If Han Sen said things were okay, then she couldn’t keep herself from believing him.

The Blood God Mantis ate the red coral slowly. They waited for one hour, and after all that time, the mantis had only eaten a small part of the plant. But its body was glowing like a polished ruby.

“Han Sen, you are a crystallizer. But you are also Knife Queen’s student. Will you marry a crystallizer or a Rebate?” Yun Suyi asked jokingly.

“I have a wife. She is the same race as me,” Han Sen answered lackadaisically, as he looked at the mantis.

Yun Suyi's face fell. She looked extremely disappointed. "Why didn't you bring your wife?"

"My kids are young. She needed to take care of them, so she stayed at home," Han Sen answered.

"You have kids?" Yun Suyi's eyes opened wide.

Yes. I have two that are biological, and others that are... adopted," Han Sen answered.

Yun Suyi's heart was broken. She found herself struggling to breathe. She looked at Han Sen and sighed. She didn't say another word for a long time.

Chapter 1987 - Blood God Mantis

Chapter 1987 Blood God Mantis

The body of the Blood God Mantis was only a tenth of the size of the plant it was munching. It ate slowly, but when it ate a bit of the coral, its belly did not swell. Its body did glow strangely, however.

Before it finished eating the red coral, another aspect of its body changed. The shadow of a red reaper appeared on it. Its hands held a scythe, like a tool to harvest souls.

The mist on the shadow was getting stronger, and it looked as if it was set to become solid.

“It’s evolving. Will it become a Marquise or a mutant?” Han Sen asked as he looked upon the Blood God Mantis.

“Spirits are just substances formed of light, smoke, and air. They aren’t really solid. When they become Marquise, they won’t grow any more solid than they were originally. They will only gain power. Look at the Red God Mantis. It’s not becoming a Marquise; it’s mutating,” Yun Suyi said.

“It is good to be a mutant. I love mutants.” Han Sen smiled.

The Blood God Mantis’ red smoke was getting heavier. The red smoke reaper could be seen clearly now. At this point, it was hard to distinguish from an actual creature.

The next second, Han Sen saw the red reaper wave its scythe towards the red coral. It broke the rest of the red coral, and then the red smoke on its body became a vortex. It sucked all the scattered pieces into it.

When the red coral entered the whirl, the red reaper’s smoke became thicker. That was particularly true of the scythe in its hands. Its smoke form began to solidify, and before long, it had turned into a crystal blade.

The Blood God Mantis' body was shining. The light glowed through the red reaper.

Han Sen was staring into Blood God Mantis' body, focusing on the blood air that swirled inside.

"It is going to finish mutating. Now is the best chance," Yun Suyi said.

"There's no rush; let's keep watching." Han Sen wanted to see what the Blood God Mantis' gene art might be. He wanted to see how strong it was.

After two hours, the Blood God Mantis finished the mutation process. The red reaper became smoke, then drew back into its body. It vanished from sight.

Blood God Mantis' body did not grow large from ingesting the coral. It was still one foot long, and its body still looked like ruby.

Then, all of a sudden, it flapped its wings and squealed. It suddenly came for Han Sen, fast as a red shadow.

Perhaps it had noticed Han Sen and Yun Suyi a while ago. It might have refrained from attacking then due to the fact that it was undergoing the evolution process. Once it was done, it now fancied killing them.

"Spell," Han Sen said quietly. Then, Spell appeared before him in her ladylike form. She wielded two pistols, and she fired at the Blood God Mantis with both.

Pang! Pang!

Two bullets hit the Blood God Mantis, but they didn't break its shell. They only left two spell markings on it.

Blood God Mantis squealed with anger. Its body turned into a red shadow, and it leaped at Spell. The arms of the Mantis swung like scythes, and they were going to cut her.

Spell moved quickly, evading Blood God Mantis' attack. She held her hands together and summoned a rocket launcher. Then, she fired a shot at the Blood God Mantis.

Han Sen frowned. He didn't know why Spell was using a rocket launcher right now. The rocket launcher was stronger than the pistols, yes, but it was too slow. With the speed of the Blood God Mantis, the creature could easily dodge.

And yes, Blood God Mantis did indeed flap its wings to dodge upwards. It got well clear of the rocket. It then resumed its approach to Spell.

Spell retreated, still clutching the rocket launcher. The Blood God Mantis continued to advance, but the rocket that had gone by suddenly swung around like a heat-seeking missile. It hit the mantis in the back.

Boom!

There was an explosion, and Blood God Mantis' body was sent flying away. Its shell was covered in a number of small wounds. The rocket must have damaged its shell when it detonated.

But those wounds were nothing to the mantis. They only made it angry. It squealed, then jumped back at Spell.

"D*mn! The round that leaves a mark can track an enemy's movement. It alters the course of the rocket. I wonder if the bullets can have a similar function?" Han Sen thought to himself.

Swiftly, Han Sen's question was answered. Spell turned the rocket launcher into a pair of pistols again. Her legs were crossed as she dodged Blood God Mantis' attack. It was like she was performing a beautiful and elegant dance.

In that elegant dance, Spell's pistols fired continuously. It did not look like she was aiming at the Blood God Mantis, but the bullets drew a curve in the sky. And then, they all landed on the mantis. The rounds did not miss a single mark across the mantis' body.

“So the pistol bullets can track too, huh?” Han Sen was so happy.

Yun Suyi looked at the scene strangely. Spell was just a geno armament, yet she was capable of fighting a mutant Earl without any directions from her master. Normal geno armaments were not capable of something like that. In fact, most Earl geno armaments could not fight at all. They didn't have a will of their own. They did not have intelligence like Spell did.

The pistols were a little weak. They hit the same spots on Blood God Mantis, but they failed to heavily damage it.

Blood God Mantis tried to attack Spell, but it failed. After Spell drew some distance between the two, she summoned her sniper rifle. She wanted to get rough. But before Spell could fire the sniper rifle, a strange red smoke suddenly appeared behind her back. A crystal scythe was sweeping down towards her neck.

Han Sen used his mind to make Spell quickly dodge, but it was too late. The crystal scythe slashed across her back. Her white armor was cut into by an inch, and it sliced open the muscles in her back deep enough to reveal bone.

Fortunately, Spell was not a living creature. She had no blood to lose.

After Spell was attacked, she moved forward. The Blood God Mantis screamed, and it jumped forward. The red reaper followed her from behind, and they attacked her together.

“Now that the Blood God Mantis has mutated, it can create a spirit that works like a fellow xenogeneic? This is similar to a summon skill,” Han Sen thought.

Yun Suyi, seeing Spell in danger, quickly said, “What do we do now?”

“Kill it,” Han Sen said coldly. He had already drawn Ghost Teeth Knife from his waist.

Chapter 1988 - My Purpose is Number One

Chapter 1988 My Purpose is Number One

Yun Suyi saw Han Sen stand up, then teleport behind the Blood God Mantis. The purple knifelight slashed, and the Blood God Mantis' triangle head looked as if it had been chomped on by a demon. The knifelight cut through it, and the body fell from the sky.

The blood reaper instantly shattered and disappeared into thin air.

“Xenogeneic Earl mutant hunted. Blood God Mantis: xenogeneic gene found.”

“I didn't get its beast soul?” Han Sen's thoughts were painted with greed.

Yun Suyi looked at Han Sen strangely. He had one-hit-killed an Earl mutant xenogeneic. That was a far stronger feat than Thousand Feather Crane could accomplish.

But seeing Han Sen's strength, Yun Suyi felt even worse. She thought to herself, “Why is he taken?”

Han Sen dug the mutant gene out of the Blood God Mantis. It was a piece of its shell. There were still some wisps of smoke rising from the bloody piece of crystal. You could tell that it was the face of the red reaper.

“Earl genes insufficient. Cannot refine mutant gene.”

Han Sen was shocked when hearing this. It was an Earl mutant gene. He had been able to refine the ant queen's gene when his total tally was a few points less. Now, he had two more genes than before, and yet he couldn't refine the Blood God Mantis' gene. He pondered how the requirements for Earl genes were determined.

Han Sen put away Blood God Mantis' mutant gene and passed the body to his legless crane. Bringing Yun Suyi along with him, Han Sen proceeded to hunt xenogeneics on Old

Night Island. He was only planning on going back when White Jade Jing opened again. After that, the exam was set to start.

Inside Buddha Kingdom, Clear Sea King bowed before Burning Lamp Alpha. “Alpha, Han Sen broke the ant’s body curse. He is now practicing in Sky Palace.”

Burning Lamp Alpha said casually, “Knife Queen must have asked the leader of Sky Palace to break my looping skill.” “We’re going to let him get off scot-free?” Clear Sea King asked, looking crushed.

“The Buddha cannot engage in acts that disrupt Sky Palace, for the time being. If he is in Sky Palace, we will have to ignore him.” Burning Lamp Alpha looked like he knew this was going to happen, as he didn’t show too much concern.

But...” Clear Sea King wished to say something more, but he was interrupted by Burning Lamp Alpha.

“First Day is practicing in Sky Palace. How is he doing?” Burning Lamp Alpha asked.

“He will be a Marquise soon,” Clear Sea King answered.

“Good. First Day isn’t as talented as Seven Spirit or Speechless, but he can match them in strength. Through his practice in Sky Palace, and a roster of talents that marry the best of two races, he might have a higher chance of becoming deified than Seven Spirit did. We cannot allow this opportunity to escape our grasp,” Burning Lamp said.

“Now that Han Sen is in Sky Palace, will he...” Clear Sea King was worried.

Burning Lamp said coldly, “Sky Palace has taken in Han Sen. They have also taken in First Day. There is no need to worry for First Day’s safety. Don’t do anything until Han Sen leaves Sky Palace. And don’t contact First Day. Wait until he is done in Sky Palace, too.”

Not long after, the day came again when White Jade Jing would open. Han Sen and Yun Suyi returned from Old Night Island. In that time, Han Sen had managed to hunt eleven Earl

xenogeneics. But since Yun Suyi was with him, he hadn't wanted to eat the xenogeneic genes in front of her. So, he brought everything back.

When the Jade Air in White Jade Jing came to an end, Han Sen brought the xenogeneic genes back to Jade Island.

"Yun Suyi, follow me home," Yun Sushang called to her sister.

Yun Suyi glanced at Yun Sushang, looking all moody, and said, "Don't worry, sis. I'm going home."

Yun Sushang was shocked. She noticed there was something amiss with Yun Suyi's attitude. With worry, she asked, "What's going on? Has Han Sen been mistreating you?"

Yun Suyi shook her head and sighed. They were not real sisters, but their relationship was just as close as two blood relatives. They talked about everything, so she told Yun Sushang the things she had learned about Han Sen.

"I see. This is good, though. You are of the Sky, and you are a daughter of an elder. You cannot be with an outsider. By ending it now, you're only saving yourself from greater suffering in the future." Yun Sushang felt relief when she heard what was troubling Yun Suyi. So, she comforted her and said, "Han Sen is smart, but he is not the only one out there for you. There are other geniuses like him, amongst the Sky. I will find you someone, and you can decide."

Yun Suyi wasn't in the mood for jokes, and she was feeling very sad. She forced a smile and went home.

Because the next day was the exam, and Han Sen was in a rush, he didn't have the time to eat slowly. After he cooked all his stuff in one pot, he used Consume to digest every xenogeneic material as fast as he could.

His body felt hot, cold, and sore, all at the same time. He felt as if he had been electrified, and some power flowed through his body. It made him feel stronger.

The gene increase announcement played in his head, over and over. He had an extra eleven Earl genes, now. Counting the two from before, he now had forty in total.

But when Han Sen picked up the Blood God Mantis' mutant gene, the announcement still declared he did not have a sufficient number of Earl genes.

"Blood God Mantis' gene has a much higher requirement than the ant queen gene, but now I don't have any more time to hunt xenogeneics." Han Sen put away the Blood God Mantis' mutant gene. He sat on his jade bed to practice Jadeskin.

Although it was not as fast as practicing in the White Jade Building, having a little was better than nothing.

The next morning, when Han Sen was about to set off toward the exam location, Yu Jing came to him. He rode over on a Jade Night Crane.

"Brother Han, there is something I seek to discuss with you." Yu Jing spoke quickly, upon his arrival on the island. "What is it?" Han Sen looked at Yu Jing.

Yu Jing lowered his voice and said, "The first opponent you face today, he hopes he can proceed through the exam. So, he paid a high price, hoping you might let him go on."

Yu Jing didn't say it directly, but he meant that the opponent had paid money for Han Sen to throw the fight.

"Sorry, I can't help him," Han Sen said simply.

Yu Jing quickly said, "Brother Han, you do know that your sixth enemy is Lone Bamboo, yes? It is difficult to determine whether or not you'll win. It would be better to take this benefit now, while you can."

When Yu Jing said that it was difficult to determine who would win, he really meant that Han Sen would most likely lose. And if Han Sen lost, all Yu Jing's money would be lost. Right now, he was only concerned with losing as little as possible.

“My purpose is to get to first place. I don’t care about anything else.” After Han Sen said that, he mounted the legless crane. He flew straight towards Sky Path Island, where the exams would be held.

Yu Jing was shocked. He was frozen in place for a while.

After a while, he snapped out of his daze. He spoke to himself miserably, saying, “I hope you can reach first place, too. But how are you going to beat Lone Bamboo?”

Chapter 1989 - Who He Came Here For?

Chapter 1989 Who He Came Here For?

On Sky Path Island, four different classes of people awaited their exam: Barons, Viscounts, Earls, and Marquises.

The most popular section today would be the Earl examination. Many Kings and Nobles had gone there, and the stands were very full. It made the other three look so quiet.

Many Barons and Viscount students went there to watch the exam, too. They went there for Lone Bamboo.

Han Sen was not afraid because no one took him seriously, anyway. Aside from Yu Jing and the people that had made a bet with him, no one would be anticipating the fight between Han Sen and Lone Bamboo.

When Lone Bamboo arrived, he was given the spotlight. People kept talking about him, trying to guess why he wished to participate in the exam. No one could guess the true reason why.

Many people looked in Lone Bamboo's direction, which made it easy for Han Sen to get a glimpse of him, too. When he saw the man's face, he looked surprised. He said, "That guy is Lone Bamboo?"

It was the arrogant man Han Sen had seen on the seventh floor of the White Jade Building.

Seeing the match roster, Han Sen found that he was one round behind Lone Bamboo. So, he sat on the sidelines to see what sort of power Lone Bamboo wielded.

Sky Palace students were strong, so it was no wonder that they were a famous high race. There were many strong representatives of the race there, and they all had amazing gen arts.

Han Sen had fun spectating, but not long after, he saw Lone Bamboo approach the arena.

It was not just Han Sen turning to take a look at Lone Bamboo. Everyone else was, as well. One corner of the arena became the center of attention for the entire place.

After a while, an Earl student from Sky Palace came to the arena. He went straight up to Lone Bamboo.

Everyone thought they could watch Lone Bamboo fight, but that Earl student came before the man and just grabbed his hand. With much excitement, he said, "Brother Lone Bamboo, I can finally see you! I have been a fan ever since I was small."

The supposed fight turned into a meet between a fan and their greatest idol. After the Earl finished speaking, he forfeited the fight and left.

"D*mn! He can do that?" Han Sen felt depressed.

The people next to Han Sen were even more depressed. Many of them were angry, even.

"That guy is too obscene! He knew he couldn't compete against Lone Bamboo. He did this just so he didn't have to embarrass himself."

"It won't go on like this, will it? With no one daring to fight him?"

"It is hard to say. Everyone knows Lone Bamboo's strength. It does not matter if they fight or not, but perhaps someone arrogant enough will think they have the chops to challenge him."

"Brother Lone Bamboo is so smart. He does not have to fight, and yet he can still win."

Not much later, it was Han Sen's turn for a reveal. He went towards the arena, but he did not draw much attention. Only a few people who knew Han Sen, or those that knew he got carried to Sky Palace, bothered to take a look.

Han Sen's opponent was called Cool Jade. He was quite good amongst the Earls, but there were many good ones like that all across Sky Palace. Being decidedly average, he wasn't very well-renown.

Yun Suyi could not help but watch Han Sen's fight. Yu Jing had not dared show himself, as he was afraid he'd bump into the guys he had made the gambit with. If he went, he believed he'd be laughed at.

Yun Suyi just sat down, and she heard a few men talking.

"Since I'm so bored, I might as well see how strong this Han Sen is. Yu Jing sure compliments him enough."

"It does not matter how strong he is. He's going to lose to Lone Bamboo, anyway."

"Don't say that just yet. Maybe he will be killed before he even meets Lone Bamboo!"

"That's right, haha."

The few were chatting amongst each other, and it made Yun Suyi frown. When she was about to confront those voices, someone suddenly approached and sat down next to her.

"Brother Lone Bamboo?" After Yun Suyi saw who the person was, she was shocked.

Everyone looked at Lone Bamboo, and they were all shocked, too. Many women looked at him with the most charming faces.

"Why is Lone Bamboo here? Who is he watching?"

"There is nothing worthy of his focus here, right?"

“Of course there isn’t. None of the Earls here are worthy of his spectating.”

“Maybe he is here to watch a friend?”

“That is possible.”

“Would it be for Yun Suyi?”

“That is possible, too. Yun Suyi’s prettiness and talent are unequaled across all of Sky Palace. She wouldn’t be an embarrassment for Lone Bamboo.”

Yun Suyi, hearing that, frowned again. She looked at Lone Bamboo, and he looked down at the arena without any emotion.

Yun Suyi’s heart jumped, and she thought to herself, “Is Lone Bamboo here for Han Sen?”

There were many fights going on in the arena, and they were all going on at the same time. It was difficult to determine who he was watching.

Han Sen felt the stare coming from Lone Bamboo, though. Han Sen turned to take a look, and he saw Lone Bamboo looking at him. He thought to himself, “Why is he watching me?”

Cool Jade pulled out his longsword and swung it at Han Sen. The swordlight possessed a purple mist, and it seemed strong enough to sunder the ceiling.

Han Sen summoned Spell next to him, and he fired his pistols at Cool Jade.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The munitions were continuously expelled, and Cool Jade’s longsword kept swinging around with its purple mist. It blocked a few bullets, but more hit his body and armor. He flew out of the ring and conceded defeat.

“D*mn! What is that thing? Is that a geno armament?”

“It looks very strong.”

“A geno armament like that is better to watch than the fight itself.”

Han Sen’s victory didn’t draw much attention, ultimately. Some students were interested in Spell, more than Han Sen himself.

Han Sen put Spell away and left the arena.

Everyone looked back to where Lone Bamboo had been, and they noticed he had vanished. Yun Suyi, who had been next to him, was gone, too.

Now people knew they had guessed it right. He had gone there for Yun Suyi.

Chapter 1990 - Fenghou Pills

Chapter 1990: Fenghou Pills

Outside the exam arena, Yun Suyi was chasing after Lone Bamboo. He left as soon as Han Sen started fighting.

“Brother Lone Bamboo, please wait!” Yun Suyi shouted as she chased after Lone Bamboo.

Lone Bamboo stopped, looked at Yun Suyi, and said, “Sister Suyi, what do you need?”

“Brother Lone Bamboo, who were you watching earlier?” Yun Suyi knew all about Lone Bamboo. There was no reason to beat around the bush.

“Why would this matter concern you?” Lone Bamboo frowned.

Yun Suyi quickly said, “Han Sen is my friend. Were you watching his fight?”

Lone Bamboo nodded. He had no reason to hide the fact. “It is because of him that I joined the exam. I do not want to be number one. I only wish to fight him.”

Yun Suyi had guessed that he had come here for Han Sen, but she didn’t expect this answer. It shocked her.

“Why...” Yun Suyi looked confused.

Han Sen was smart, but Lone Bamboo was even stronger. After seeing Han Sen’s power, she still believed Lone Bamboo was superior. This thought was inside the heads of everyone in Sky Palace. Han Sen could not change everyone’s expectations simply by performing well.

“It is because he activated the twelve buildings and five cities in White Jade Jing,” Lone Bamboo said, before he turned around.

“What?” Yun Suyi was shocked. In the history of Sky Palace, fewer than one hundred people had experienced what Lone Bamboo just claimed. And out of all the Earls in the exam, Lone Bamboo had been the only one to see all the buildings and cities.

Even Thousand Feather Crane and Yun Sushang had only been able to spy the twelve buildings. They hadn't seen a single one of the five cities.

After Han Sen beat Cool Jade, there were no more fights left for Han Sen that day. He would have to wait until the next day. He didn't leave, though. He stayed to watch the fights.

There was a difference between the geno arts of the geno universe and the geno arts of the sanctuaries. Somehow, there seemed to be a thread connecting them. Sky Palace's geno arts were very high tier. After watching the fights, Han Sen found himself learning a lot. He compared what he saw to what he had learned in the past.

Han Sen left the place when all the exams were over for the day.

Over the next few days, Han Sen did not encounter any strong enemies. Spell was so powerful that her pistols could beat everything she was put against. In no time at all, five Earl students were brought down.

It was a shame that not many of his enemies had much in the way of fame. As a result of this, his continued success drew little in the way of attention. But when people did pay attention to his fights, they were greatly interested in what sort of geno armament Spell was.

Aside from the first match that Lone Bamboo spectated, he did not return. Perhaps it was because Han Sen's opponents were so inferior, he wouldn't see much of anything regardless. Whatever the reason was, he did not come back.

And Lone Bamboo's fights were fan meet-and-greets.

No one in Sky Palace had the courage to fight Lone Bamboo. There was only one that had the courage to fight him, but when Lone Bamboo pulled out his sword, he could only move a step before the Earl student conceded.

Han Sen watched that match, and he was shocked. Lone Bamboo was stronger than he thought.

“After all, he is the one that survived the nightmare,” Han Sen thought to himself.

If he wanted the position of first, to receive Under the Sky, he’d have to beat Lone Bamboo. There was no getting around that.

The next day would be the day when Han Sen was to fight Lone Bamboo. When he returned to Jade Island that evening, he went straight to studying Jadeskin. He didn’t worry about the fight the next day.

Han Sen’s level would not be affected by emotions. Win or lose, as long as he tried his hardest, that was enough. Worrying over the results was a waste of energy.

“Brother Han, are you here?” Yu Jing had arrived at Han Sen’s island.

“What is it?” Han Sen came out the door and saw Yu Jing riding his Jade Night Crane. It circled the sky above.

Seeing Han Sen come out, Yu Jing came down and landed with the bird. He walked before Han Sen with a look of great worry and said, “Brother Han, what are you going to do to prepare for tomorrow?”

“What should I be preparing?” Han Sen looked at him with confusion.

Yu Jing looked depressed hearing that, and he gave a wry smile. “You are going to fight Uncle Lone Bamboo. You know how strong he is! You should be getting prepared.”

“How so?” Han Sen asked, laughing.

“Such as taking some pills that can temporarily boost your power. Or perhaps even a treasure. The exams allow you to take drugs, and if you don’t have any, I have some very effective pills you might benefit from,” Yu Jing said, bringing out a few bottles. He placed them in front of Han Sen and said, “I can sell them to you for a cheap price.”

“I don’t have money.” Han Sen held his hands out to the sides, showing his empty palms.

“I can take an IOU,” Yu Jing said quickly.

“I don’t want to be in debt,” Han Sen said.

Yu Jing was angered by this, and he asked, “Do you want to win or not?”

“Yeah.” Han Sen nodded.

Yu Jing gritted his teeth and pulled out a bottle. He said, “This bottle belongs to the grandmaster elder in the sixth seat. It contains the fenghou pills he created. After you use them, they can make you as strong as a Marquise for a short time. The effects last one hour, and for the purpose of fighting Lone Bamboo, I can let you borrow them all.”

“Borrow? How? If I eat it, it’ll be gone,” Han Sen asked Yu Jing.

“You use them before the fight. If you win, you reimburse me for the pills,” Yu Jing said.

“What if I lose?” Han Sen smiled at Yu Jing.

“Then that is okay. You can pay me back slowly.” Yu Jing’s jaw was starting to ache.

“I want them, but never mind. I can’t pay you back if I lose.” Han Sen smiled.

“You...” Yu Jing was so angry. Yu Jing had never done anything that put him at a disadvantage before. He had received those pills from the grandmaster, and he treated them like a treasure. He wouldn’t use them willy-nilly. He kept them in a box, and no matter how much money he was offered, he wouldn’t sell them.

Now he wanted to give them to Han Sen, and Han Sen was declining. It made him furious.

If Han Sen lost the next day, he'd also go bankrupt. Thinking of that, Yu Jing had to suppress his anger. He squeezed the bottle into Han Sen's hand and said, "Fine. You don't have to pay me back. These are a gift. Use all your strength to fight, and try your best to win tomorrow."

When Yu Jing spoke, he felt as if his heart was bleeding. His eyes were all red when he put the pills into Han Sen's hand.

He knew that even if Han Sen did use the fenghou pills, there was a fine chance he wouldn't win. But any chance was better than no chance. Yu Jing had to try everything he could to hold onto his money.

"If you really want to help, get me some Earl xenogeneic genes. I'll pay you back for those," Han Sen said, after a moment of thought.

"Sure. Which element do you need, and how many?" Yu Jing said quickly. If they'd give Han Sen a higher chance of winning, he'd do it. If he was going to go bankrupt anyway, he might as well risk it.

It does not matter. The more the merrier, but they do have to be Earl." Han Sen smiled.

Chapter 1991 - Picked Up One

Chapter 1991: Picked Up One

Not long after, Yu Jing was driving a flying beast car to Han Sen's Jade Island. He hauled a whole bunch of xenogeneic genes out of the car. There were twenty-three of them.

"Brother Han, what do you need this many xenogeneic genes for? Will they help in the fight against Lone Bamboo tomorrow?" Yu Jing asked Han Sen.

"Yes, they will be quite useful. We can sign a contract, and I'll reimburse you after the exam." Han Sen moved the xenogeneic genes into his room.

Some of those xenogeneic genes were as small as one's fingertip. Others were as big as a mortar and pestle. All-in-all, they took up half of his entire room space.

Fortunately, Han Sen had the technique called Consume. If he hadn't, eating all of that in one night would have been impossible.

After Yu Jing left, he went back to the stone house and began cooking the smallest genes.

Han Sen swallowed a small bone. After he did, a weird power went into his own bones, and he heard an announcement: "Earl Gene +1"

After proceeding to eat more and more, Han Sen tried the Blood God Mantis mutant gene. He had eaten seventeen pieces, and when his Earl gene tally reached fifty-seven, the mutant gene did not play him the announcement he feared.

"I can finally eat it!" Han Sen put the ruby-looking bit into his mouth. He swallowed it, using Consume to digest it.

Quickly, a hot flush rushed through Han Sen's body. Just like the ant queen gene, it circulated on a path through Han Sen's veins. The mutant gene's power took a long time to get absorbed. But after a while, he heard an announcement.

"Earl class xenogeneic geno art obtained: Red Reaper"

Han Sen tracked the energy flow, and suddenly, a reaper of red smoke appeared. It clutched a red scythe. It was just like the reaper that appeared on the mantis before.

The Red Reaper did not have a mind of its own. It was just a form of energy wrapped with a master's control. Han Sen had to control it with his own will, but even so, it was very strong. It was far stronger than the Blood Good Mantis had been.

Han Sen checked, and he could see that the body was filled with red mist. When a portion of the body was broken, it could regenerate. It wouldn't be damaged.

"This xenogeneic geno art is interesting." Han Sen could do two things at the same time, so controlling the Red Reaper would not be difficult. Also, the power it wielded was stronger than Spell. That being said, it could only be used in close-quarters. The Red Reaper's existence also consumed Han Sen's own power. Every second it was around cost Han Sen energy, so he couldn't use it for a very long time. Han Sen was strong, but even he would end up tired after using it for a while.

The Earl xenogeneic genes were so big, and Han Sen did not even have the time to eat them. He'd give them back to Yu Jing after the fight the next day.

The exam's popularity was still as hot as it was a few days prior. Many people continued coming, all with the desire to watch Lone Bamboo. No one thought it was extra special today, though.

Yu Jing hid himself in a corner and did not show up. He didn't want to be found by the men he was avoiding.

Thousand Feather Crane, Yun Sushang, Yun Suyi, and First Day had come to watch. Yun Suyi's mind was wracked with conflicted thoughts.

Lone Bamboo had come to the exam place. When it was his turn to do battle, he walked forward.

Han Sen didn't do anything particularly eye-catching, and he just walked before Lone Bamboo.

Everything seemed to be developing fairly ordinarily. This was what had occurred before every other fight with Lone Bamboo.

Seeing Han Sen walk over towards Lone Bamboo, Yu Jing—in the corner—felt beads of sweat form on his forehead and hands. He was more nervous than he would be if he was the one to fight.

“The Fenghou pills! Eat them!” Yu Jing, not seeing Han Sen eat the pills, wanted to scream.

But Han Sen did not do anything of the sort. He just walked over to Lone Bamboo, and at a distance of ten steps away, he started swinging.

Ghost Teeth Knife had purple sword air. It was like a beast that could sunder the air, and it roared as it came before Lone Bamboo.

Lone Bamboo had a jade sword on his waist, but he did not draw it. He used his left hand like a knife. The hand looked like jade, and it was swung at Han Sen like a blade. Its aim was the Teeth Knife knife air.

Pang!

The purple knife air slammed into the invisible knife air in the sky. The power shattered into a number of smaller knives that scattershot the ground.

The rocks were cut open by the knife air, and there were far too many impacts across the ground. The ground could not sustain the pressure, and so it cracked. The rocks arose, and they were cut in the air. They were shattered even more.

Dong!

Amidst the rocks and knife airs, they both started to move. Han Sen had his white Spell armor, while Lone Bamboo wore a jade armorset. Their knife airs kept going against each other quickly.

The knife airs were all over the place, and the ground was broken. Even the lines of the arena were flickering. It looked as if they'd break at any given moment. The audience members that were sitting fairly close, started to fall back a bit.

Everyone was shocked. No one expected a fight of such magnitude could erupt, without any prior indication.

Four Duke class elites landed around the arena. They released power into the ring of battle to stabilize it.

Yisha's student is different. He is almost as impressive as she was." In Sky Palace, a Sky with white hair observed the events of that arena. His eyes squinted.

The eyes of many ordinary students were having difficulty tracking the fight. They saw the power everywhere, but amidst it all, they could not actually see Han Sen or Lone Bamboo.

"D*mn! I thought that Han Sen was weak. He was carried into Sky Palace, wasn't he? How is he so strong?"

"Teeth Knife is powerful. It is too strong."

"It is no wonder he was the student selected by Knife Queen. I knew an elite like her would not accept a weak student."

As everyone discussed this, the knife air in the arena dissipated, then vanished. Han Sen and Lone Bamboo were still standing ten steps away from each other. The entire arena had been destroyed, as if an earthquake had taken place.

“Teeth Knife is powerful,” Lone Bamboo said.

Your knife skills aren’t too shabby, either,” Han Sen answered.

“When I was in my 1964th dream, I was a knifeman. I wanted to be number one, and I attacked everyone. I died during a siege. This knife skill is called Picking Up One. I created this during that life,” Lone Bamboo said calmly.

Chapter 1992 - The Knife Figh

Chapter 1992 The Knife Figh

“You need a knife?” Han Sen said.

Lone Bamboo nodded and said, “Yes, I need a knife.”

After that, Lone Bamboo bowed towards Sky Palace and said, “To all these people, I am asking if someone would be willing to lend me their knife.”

Then, a green light from Sky Palace traveled towards him like a rainbow. It descended in front of Lone Bamboo, and it was revealed to be a long, green knife. It was adorned with a number of decorative patterns.

That narrow knife was in front of Lone Bamboo, and it hovered there, making noises. The nearby students who were wearing knives felt the knives shaking on their belts.

“Thank you.” Lone Bamboo bowed before the knife before picking it up. When he did this, the knife made a sound.

The moment Lone Bamboo took the knife, it was as if the knife blended into him. You couldn't tell if they were two separate entities, and it was like they were a part of each other. The knife was like an extension of his arm.

“The knife is called Spring Heart. It is a King class weapon.” Lone Bamboo touched the knife, and spoke to Han Sen with a serious tone.

“Ghost Teeth. It is also a King class weapon,” Han Sen said.

“Brother Lone Bamboo borrowed a weapon from the armory to fight Han Sen. This Han Sen is not as simple as he appears.”

“He is the student of Knife Queen, after all. He has a King class weapon, as well. Of course Lone Bamboo needs a King class weapon to compete. He’d be at a disadvantage, otherwise.”

“It is rare to see Lone Bamboo take things seriously like this.”

Yu Jing was quite excited. Lone Bamboo borrowed a King class weapon to fight Han Sen, and that meant Lone Bamboo was taking his opponent seriously. It also meant Han Sen was powerful, and this little factoid imbued Yu Jing with a glimmer of hope.

They both spoke, but they did not yet attack. They looked at each other, and there was an indescribable atmosphere between them.

Han Sen did not strike, but his presence was scary. He was like a beast on top of a mountain, roaring. And Lone Bamboo was like a sharp weapon, pointing at the sky. It wouldn’t fall, even in the midst of a storm.

As their presences grew stronger, the presences touched each other and made an explosion. There were two powers fighting in the air.

“That scary knifemind is practically solid.” Someone was in shock.

“These knifeminds are as strong as King class ones. How do they do it?”

“It makes sense for Lone Bamboo, as he has experienced a lot. He became a master of the knife in his dreams. It is understandable. But why does Han Sen have such a knifemind, too? Has he had experience as a knife master?”

Yun Suyi asked Yun Sushang, “Sister, out of Han Sen and Lone Bamboo, whose knifemind is stronger?”

Yun Sushang gave a wry smile. “Their knifeminds are both King class equivalents. I cannot make such a call.”

First Day quietly said, "Lone Bamboo has experienced so much. His will can most certainly rival a King class or deified being. I did not expect Han Sen to possess such a strong will, as well. I have no idea how he has done this."

When those knifeminds reached their zenith, both the knives were swung at the same time. No one took a step back, and they both threw all their powers forward.

Only one of them would emerge victorious. There was no other possibility.

Dong!

The knives came against each other. Their souls were colliding. This was a fight about strength.

The striking sounds, and the moaning of their souls, trumpeted between the knives. A single second later, the two knifelights flashed between them. The shattered knife air broke everything around them, but neither of them backed away.

In this moment, the loser would be determined by whoever took a step back.

The knife light was green and purple, in the center. They kept hitting each other, making noise. No one could see anything in the gap between the two.

When the collision reached its max, a stronger power exploded in the middle. It blew them both a dozen meters away. Boom!

The next second, everything between them turned to dust. There was a big crater in the middle.

Lone Bamboo's eyes looked as if they were on fire. His left hand gripped the bottom of the handle, and he lifted it back up with two hands. Then, he slashed towards Han Sen like an executioner.

The green knifelight suddenly formed a line that split heaven and hell. It was coming for Han Sen, and it came at him like it was going to cut the world in half. Black and white. Sky and earth. Yin and Yang. They were not supposed to merge.

Han Sen looked heavy. He drew a circle with his Ghost Teeth Knife, and when that knifelight struck the circle, it ricocheted off in a different direction.

And then Han Sen shouted. The knife circle sent the knifelight back to Lone Bamboo.

“Great!” Lone Bamboo shouted. He went forward with the Spring Heart knife. He slashed towards the knife circle. The knifelight broke the knife circle, and the knifelight that came back was following the subsequent hit back to Han Sen.

Han Sen was not backing down. He held Ghost Teeth Knife above his head and slashed in Lone Bamboo’s direction. The knife air was like a beast going after Lone Bamboo’s knifelight.

They hit each other in the air, like water being thrown against each other. They blended into each other and disappeared.

It was just a few slashes, and people were confused. They did not know what was happening.

“Seeing that knife skill, I realize my own knife skills are rubbish,” said a Marquise that practiced with knives.

“These two are too scary. I would rather fight a Marquise than fight someone like that, who is at my same level,” murmured an Earl that looked pale.

He imagined himself being down in that fight and knew that he would be killed, either by the hands of Han Sen or Lone Bamboo.

An Earl felt the same way and said, “Their levels are not like their official tier. They might be Earls, but even if they were to challenge Marquises, I find the former more likely to win.”

“It is no wonder Knife Queen wanted to take an outsider student. For him to be able to fight with Lone Bamboo like that, Han Sen must be a monster.”

The battle was harder than Han Sen thought it would be. He pushed Teeth Knife and his knifemind to the max, but he still could not suppress Lone Bamboo. He was in a bad situation, and the slightest mistake would mean he_d lose.

The people watching were enjoying the spectacle. Every attack that was performed was something phenomenal. Sometimes, after seeing a move, the audience would just think about it. And while they thought, Han Sen and Lone Bamboo would exchange a hundred more moves. People wished they could replay it all, so they could examine every detail.

Eventually, many elites from across Sky Palace came over to the arena. Kings gathered to witness the fight.

Chapter 1993 - Competing Skills

Chapter 1993 Competing Skills

“Sister, can Han Sen win?” Yun Suyi’s hands were drenched in sweat. She grabbed Yun Sushang’s shoulder as she felt her body go soft. She feared she’d faint if she didn’t stabilize herself.

“I really don’t know,” Yun Sushang said, but she felt bad about it.

“He can’t win.” A man’s voice sounded next to the two sisters.

“Dad?” Yun Sushang and Yun Suyi shouted upon seeing the man.

Thousand Feather Crane bowed and addressed him as master. That middle-aged man, with gray clothes, was Yun Suyi’s father. He was the tenth elder called Yun Changkong.

“Dad, are you saying Han Sen will lose?” Yun Suyi couldn’t help but ask.

Yun Changkong shook his head and said, “I said he wouldn’t win. I did not say he will lose.”

“Then what does that mean?” The three of them were frozen. What Yun Changkong said was too strange.

“Both of them have kniveskills and knifeminds that have reached a pinnacle that ordinary people cannot reach. There is a minor difference between winning and losing. Anyone can win. Anyone can lose. If this was a deathmatch, one would be a winner. But this is not a deathmatch; if this is for the comparing of skills, neither can truly win,” Yun Changkong explained.

“Then how do we determine who will win?” Yun Suyi asked.

“Who knows? Why do you want to know the result so bad? Isn’t it better not to focus on a winner and a loser, right now?” Yun Changkong smiled.

Yun Suyi wished to say something, but she noticed Han Sen and Lone Bamboo were separated. Neither of them were striking, and she nervously looked their way. She wanted to see what was happening.

“It looks like knives can’t determine a winner.” Han Sen sighed. He then put Ghost Teeth Knife back to his waist. He thought Teeth Knife was close to deified, given the extent of his knifemind. He wanted to suppress Lone Bamboo, but his tactic hadn’t worked at all.

Lone Bamboo lifted the Spring Heart Knife in front of himself on a flat palm. He bowed, and then the knife became a green light and disappeared. It returned to the main island.

“What else are you good at?” Lone Bamboo asked as he looked at Han Sen.

If this sentence had come from someone else, it would have sounded like pure arrogance. But this was coming from Lone Bamboo, so it felt like something ordinary.

He had experienced so much. He was not only good with knives; he was probably talented with everything. That’s why he had the guts to say something like that.

Han Sen went silent and said, “Whichever weapon we use, the result will likely be the same. If we are not fighting for our lives, determining a winner might be impossible. This is pointless.”

“What are you thinking?” Lone Bamboo asked.

“If we can’t fight, then this match is dull. How about we stand here, and we use our techniques to compete? We can see who can crack the skills of the other,” Han Sen said quietly.

“Sure. You can go first,” Lone Bamboo said.

Han Sen did not hesitate. He cast a jade light that landed on Lone Bamboo’s chest.

When the Sky Palace students saw the jade light land on Lone Bamboo, they became so nervous that they wanted to scream.

But when the jade light landed on him, nothing really happened. It turned into a strange symbol, and it became attached to his chest.

Everyone looked at the symbol strangely; they were unsure what it was supposed to do.

Lone Bamboo moved his body and said, “This skill can reduce speed. It is very unique. This is the best geno art I have seen that is associated with such an effect. It is not much worse than a King class geno art, but...”

“But what?” Han Sen asked the question the entire audience wished to.

Lone Bamboo said coldly, “If I am not mistaken, your geno art uses the Outer Sky powers from Sky Palace.”

After he said that, everyone in Sky Palace was shocked. Han Sen was an outsider, and he had only walked the Road to the Sky once. And yet already, he could use the fabled words to synthesize a new geno art. It was unbelievable.

Everyone looked at Han Sen, awaiting his answer.

“Not bad.” Han Sen nodded, in admittance.

All the Kings, hearing Han Sen admit this, were shocked. It was hard to believe.

“He wasn’t carried because he could not walk to Sky Palace. It is because he was learning the two words Sky Palace from the Road to the Sky. He was successful. This guy is scary!”

The students in Sky Palace discussed. Even the powerful Kings all looked surprised.

If Outer Sky feelings were that easy to grasp, Sky Palace would have elites everywhere.

Lone Bamboo quietly said, "I practiced the Textless Book. Outer Sky powers come from there, so it won't work on me."

After that, Lone Bamboo's body trembled. The turtle shell was then shattered. It hadn't even left a mark on him.

"It is your turn." Han Sen shrugged his shoulder. He knew it would be difficult to trap Lone Bamboo with the Turtle skill.

Lone Bamboo did not move, but his eyes did. And when they did, a light went into Han Sen.

Han Sen did not evade it, and he let the light enter him.

"What is this power? It feels so familiar." Yun Sushang frowned in thought.

Yun Changkong said grimly, "It is a dream skill from the Dream Beast. Lone Bamboo was only there for ten years, and yet he learned Dream. Although it is not as good as a thousand dreams, it is enough to trap Han Sen in there for his whole life."

When Yun Suyi heard that, she was shocked. A lifetime could be long, and so he might enter a sleep from which he would never wake.

But when that light landed on Han Sen, his eyes were so clear. It didn't look as if he was going to dream.

The light on Han Sen slowly disappeared. And eventually, he smiled and said, "It is my turn again."

"Please," Lone Bamboo said simply.

First Day was confused, and so he said, "Weird. Why is Han Sen not in a dream? Does he have a skill that can remove dreams?"

Yun Changkong shook his head and said, “He didn’t need to remove the dream. Snaring someone in a dream requires a stronger will than your opponent, and for that foe to stumble into the dream. Han Sen didn’t fall into a dream, and that meant his will is as strong as Lone Bamboo’s. That is why it did not work on him. The nightmare that Lone Bamboo experienced was something that should have taken him ten thousand years to wake up from. But Lone Bamboo’s will continued to grow, even inside that dream. It reached a scary level, and the dreams after did not affect him. That is how he was able to wake up in only ten years.”

“Does that mean Han Sen’s will is as good as Brother Lone Bamboo, who experienced the dream? How did he manage that?” First Day asked with wonder.

“That is something you will have to ask him.” Yun Changking shook his head. He looked at Han Sen with admiration.

Chapter 1994 - You Come, I Go

Chapter 1994 You Come, I Go

Han Sen sighed as he tried to think of which skill he might need in order to defeat Lone Bamboo. Han Sen had mastered many techniques, but when compared to Lone Bamboo, he only excelled in a meager few.

Lone Bamboo could spend a lifetime learning proficiency with a skill in the space of one dream. Han Sen, however, was just a human. A life was only a few decades long. He wasn't even a hundred years old, and so he couldn't compete with Lone Bamboo.

If they were going to continue competing like this, Han Sen would run out of skills to use. So, he had to end the fight. This could not go on much longer.

"But how do I stop Lone Bamboo?" Han Sen wondered. But then, the light of an idea popped up.

Han Sen moved his Ghost Teeth Knife, but it wasn't headed for Lone Bamboo. He struck a rock on the ground and cut out a ten-meter-long, rectangular stone. He placed it on the ground.

People were curious and unsure what he was doing.

Han Sen punched the rock's side. Then he smiled at Lone Bamboo and said, "Can you do that?"

Everyone thought this was weird, because when Han Sen punched the rock, there was no mark left on it at all. They didn't know what he meant by this.

Lone Bamboo's hand became a knife, and he slashed the rock and cut it in half.

And then, people realized that no mark had been left on the side of the stone Han Sen had punched, but on the inside, there was the mark of a fist. The stone around that fist-shape had become dust. It appeared after Lone Bamboo cut the rock open. There was a fist-shaped hole. It fit Han Sen's fist.

"Very powerful Yin force. He can punch a ten-meter-long rock and not break it. With this Yin force, armor would be useless against him. Any defense would find itself obliterated," said someone in the audience, surprised.

Lone Bamboo did not speak, and just punched the rock that had been cut in half. It was still the same, and the rock did not look damaged.

Han Sen used a knife to cut that rock in half. The side that was closer to him had a fist mark, even though the location was the same.

"Good," Han Sen complimented. He had practiced with Yin Yang forces. He had spent much effort to become talented with it, but Lone Bamboo was not much worse.

The students of Sky Palace were so happy. They were complimenting Lone Bamboo's punch. Han Sen was the one who posed the question, so it was obvious he'd be good at it. It was more surprising that Lone Bamboo was able to do the same.

Lone Bamboo said emotionlessly, "When I was in my 731st life, I was a weak woman. But I was born in a boxing family. I was bullied, but I was still able to create a Yin force fist skill. It was not powerful, but it hurt others on the inside. I killed all those who bullied me, and I became an infamous villain. But then alas, I was poisoned. It took three long years for my organs to rot, and for me to finally die."

Lone Bamboo spoke of this calmly, as if it was nothing. Even so, people were shocked to hear all this.

Your turn," Han Sen said quietly. He was saddened to hear about Lone Bamboo's dream.

Lone Bamboo picked up another piece of rock. He stabbed it into the ground like a tablet, leaving seven or eight meters of it sticking out.

Han Sen looked at Lone Bamboo, unsure what he was going to do. If they were going to write and compete with their wills, Han Sen could use Teeth Knife knifemind. He wouldn't lose.

But Lone Bamboo knew this, and so Han Sen could guess that this wouldn't boil down to simple writing.

Lone Bamboo looked at the rock, but he didn't pull out his sword. He walked back ten meters and said, "My sword will break through nine tiers. Can yours?"

The students that watched were confused. They didn't know what that meant. Furthermore, he only spoke and did not perform anything.

Yun Suyi was confused, too. Just as she was going to ask Yun Changkong, there was an explosion. The surface of the rock was blown up, and there was a crack. And then, there was writing on it. "I want to break through nine tiers." The words were carved into the stone, as if by a weapon. It felt like a mad bull. It felt as if those words were going to come out of the stone and leap into the skies.

"Sonic blade is not too rare. It can break rocks one hundred meters away, but Lone Bamboo can write with it so powerfully. Not one else who has practiced with sonic powers could do such a thing. This isn't a matter of control. It's just that no one else can make a sound like that." A Sky Palace Duke found himself in shock.

"Because Lone Bamboo has experienced a lot, he has collected so many skills and feelings. Normal people are glad to just have one. Han Sen has practiced with knives and Yin, which is rare for someone of his age. There is no way he has sonic powers, as well."

"I am afraid Han Sen cannot compete with Lone Bamboo now."

“There are no others that can equal Lone Bamboo. Even though Han Sen is strong, to compete with Lone Bamboo like that is impossible.”

Many students were shocked. Han Sen smiled and asked, “Which life did you learn this skill in?”

Lone Bamboo’s face did not change, and he calmly said, “It was in my 3754th life. In it, I was a musician that killed others with my music. I was trapped in an echoing valley, and eventually killed by my own musical powers.”

Han Sen shook his head and did not say anything. He walked to the other side of the rock, just as Lone Bamboo had done. He stopped ten meters away and took a deep breath.

“Can Han Sen do it?” Yun Suyi was worried, and so she grabbed Yun Sushang’s arm. She knew they could not be romantically involved, but that did not mean she wished to see Han Sen fail.

Yun Sushang had a wry smile. “How am I supposed to know? But not many people practice with sonic powers, and especially to the degree of Lone Bamboo. They are a rare talent, and we haven’t seen Han Sen use a technique that is in any way similar to it. This is bad.”

Yun Suyi was even more worried now. She wanted to say something, but before she did, Han Sen was speaking again.

“Sitting in the clouds, lonely and cold,” Han Sen said. He didn’t think too much about it, but he wanted to comfort Lone Bamboo. He wanted to understand him.

Lone Bamboo had suffered ten thousand nightmares. Although he had become a genius as a result, Han Sen knew he must have been sad and lonely. No one knew how difficult it was to be that powerful. No one could understand the pain.

After Han Sen wrote those words down, the rock shattered like powder. The seven words appeared, and they hit the onlookers like a physical weight. People's hearts sank in their chests.

Chapter 1995 - One Sword Wakes the Heart Demon

Chapter 1995 One Sword Wakes the Heart Demon

“D*mn! This guy has a powerful sonic skill?” The audience at Sky Palace had their mouths wide open.

Yun Suyi looked very happy. She looked at Yun Changkong and asked, “Dad, does that mean that Han Sen passed the test?”

“I guess so.” Yun Changkong saw Han Sen’s sword convey a portion of his strong mind, but since Yun Changkong wasn’t proficient with sonic powers, he couldn’t judge too accurately.

“It is your turn.” Lone Bamboo saw the words Han Sen had written, and after a glimmer of surprise, he returned to his normal state. He spoke to Han Sen calmly.

Han Sen was delighted. He had learned from Six Paths Emperor the Six Paths swordskills. Amongst them was Sonic Sword, which he also took the time to learn. It was fortunate he had learned it, too. If he hadn’t, he’d have lost right then and there.

Six Paths swordskills were so strong. They couldn’t have been any worse than the swordskills practiced in the geno universe. If he had been born here, Six Paths would have been a famous swordsman for sure.

Thinking about Six Paths swordskills, Han Sen thought to himself, “The spirit sword of Six Paths can trigger depression and break the will of enemies. It can make them fall to depression. Lone Bamboo has experienced so much, so he must be quite depressed already. The more depressed a person is, the more effective this is. Perhaps there is a chance I can win, after all.”

Han Sen looked at Lone Bamboo and smiled. “I have a sword. You can take a look at it, if you want.”

“Yes, please,” Lone Bamboo responded.

Han Sen ran a skill. When he learned Six Paths’ swordskills, he learned Heart Sword first. He hadn’t practiced much of the other five, but he had used this a great deal. The others weren’t comparable to his proficiency with this.

He put his right finger and middle finger together. It looked like a sword, and with it, he pointed at Lone Bamboo’s forehead.

Lone Bamboo did not dodge. Calmly, he watched Han Sen’s performance. But when Han Sen’s sword air came to his forehead, Lone Bamboo’s face changed.

The Kings in Sky Palace noticed Lone Bamboo’s face change. And what they saw shocked them. They couldn’t see what was so special about that sword, to make his face change like so.

Ordinary people, and even the Kings themselves, thought it was an average strike. There was nothing special about it, or so it seemed. It really looked like a normal strike.

“What is this? Is it something different? I can’t see the power inside it.” “If you could see it, you would become Lone Bamboo.”

“Oh, no! Han Sen is a top enemy to shake Lone Bamboo so much.”

A second later, Han Sen’s finger was on Lone Bamboo’s forehead. Then, he pulled it away. He returned to his position.

Lone Bamboo’s cold face was contorting in a bad way. His eyes were full of red vessels. He was trying to control something. But the scary power on him was getting heavier. The power in his body was like an angry beast raging around inside of him. He had only spilled some of its presence, but it was visibly scary.

“Oh, no! Han Sen’s strike has triggered Lone Bamboo’s demons.” Yun Changkong’s face lost a little color.

“Dad, what is going on?” Yun Suyi and the others did not understand, either. They all turned to look at him.

Yun Changkong looked complicated, and he explained, “Lone Bamboo’s mental torture was excruciating, and he persevered through the ten thousand nightmares by his sheer force of will. Even though he endured it, he has never come to feel at peace. It is like when a flood comes, and you raise a dam to stop the flow of the water. It’s a reservoir.

All the water is stopped where it is, but it does not disappear. It is still there. The more he stops these thoughts, the greater the depression he feels. Imagine how scary it must be to have the struggles of ten thousand lives in your mind.”

“But the ten thousand nightmares were endured, and he survived despite his depression. Without interruption, keeping it at bay with a dam might work. But Han Sen’s sword seems to have triggered the depression to act out. The suppressed emotions, that were built up for ten thousand years, have been let loose in an explosion. Lone Bamboo’s mental fortitude had been broken. His ten-thousand-year depression has come. It is scarier than whatever he felt in any particular one of the lives he experienced. That depression might very well break him now, and it probably would do the same even if he was a King. Lone Bamboo...” Yun Changkong stopped talking. He looked worried.

Lone Bamboo was breathing like a beast, with green veins pulsating. His presence was losing its composure. He was looking more like a demon, almost freed from its cage. Many students that were watching look terrified at the mere sight.

Roar! Lone Bamboo roared to the sky. The energy inside him broke free, and it burst out.

The whole place filled up with scary feelings that were hard to describe. Han Sen was in the arena. Even the students outside the ring could feel Lone Bamboo, even if they had a weak will. Their eyes started to cry. They felt hopeless, and they wished to die.

Some Baron students could not control themselves. They pulled out their swords and put them to their necks. It felt as if there was no more hope, and only sadness would prevail. They felt as if there was nothing left to live for, and death was all they could want.

“Hmph.” A sigh came from the palace. Some weird strength re-imbued the arena, separating it from Lone Bamboo and his power.

The students that were going to cut themselves, snapped out of their daze. They were so scared by what happened, many of them had p*ssed themselves.

In the arena, Lone Bamboo stared at Han Sen with a scary presence. His face looked terrifying.

Han Sen did not expect Lone Bamboo’s depression to be this heavy. It exceeded all his expectations, and he rather regretted doing what he had done. If Lone Bamboo could not withstand the pressure and tried to kill himself, even if the elites of Sky Palace saved him, he would continue living with a broken mind.

Han Sen wanted to win, yes. But he did not want to destroy Lone Bamboo.

But now, it was too late to stop. He had triggered Lone Bamboo’s depression, and not even Han Sen could suppress it. “Dad, what is going on?” This time, even Yun Sushang sounded shaky.

Yun Changkong looked dim, and he slowly said, “Han Sen’s talents are too scary. He has completely triggered the volume of Lone Bamboo’s depression. Lone Bamboo’s demons have awoken. This now leads to two possibilities. Either he beats the demon and reverts to his previous self, or he succumbs to it. If that happens, he might try to commit suicide or even kill people.”

“Can Brother Lone Bamboo make it?” Thousand Feather Crane asked.

“Hard!” Yun Changkong spoke only one word.

Chapter 1996 - Fight Me

1996 Fight Me

“Living is hard, and life is grey.”

This time, Han Sen had to acknowledge the fact that he had done something to harm another person that would not benefit himself. He had broken a dam that restrained the turmoil and pain of a thousand lifetimes. It had unleashed a demon.

The students beyond the arena were protected by the elites, so Lone Bamboo’s emotions were trapped inside the arena. And in that arena, only Lone Bamboo and Han Sen stood against that tide of pain. The wretched emotions stemming from Lone Bamboo were all bearing down on Han Sen.

Han Sen felt as if his life was grey, desperate, painful, sad, and full of regret. All these emotions were striking him at once. No matter how strong his will was, he could not fend them all off.

A pretty young bride stepped out of a red carriage. She was to marry a handsome man, but during the ceremony, a group of thieves stormed in. The knifelights flashed, and blood was everywhere. Obscene laughs cackled in the air. The pretty bride-to-be was raped to death in front of her husband.

In this life, Lone Bamboo died without closing his eyes.

In a forest, a mother tiger was playing with two cubs. But suddenly, there was a gunshot. The mother tiger was hit by a tranquilizer and immobilized. She watched as her two children were skinned and cooked. The hunters ate them, until the last scraps of them were gone. The tiger’s eyes shed blood tears.

In this life, Lone Bamboo would have rather died.

In the sky, a swordsman was fighting a number of enemies. He killed many, but he was injured. He was left powerless, and he would soon die from his wounds.

A middle-aged man, holding a young woman, looked at the swordsman with disdain. He laughed. "Lone Bamboo, just die. I will play with your woman and tend to your home. Perhaps I might kill your son, though."

The swordsman roared in fury, but death was not something he could escape. He died beneath the man's feet, without the strength to even grasp at his clothes.

Every dream was a loop of despair. Every life had lived, rich or poor, important or menial, ended sadly.

Lone Bamboo's despair was driving Han Sen crazy. The depression lay heavily on Han Sen as he saw the strife Lone Bamboo had been through.

Although he didn't have to experience all of Lone Bamboo's nightmares, he saw the saddest scenes in Lone Bamboo's memory. They were sent directly into Han Sen's mind, and they made Han Sen feel as if he was right there.

Han Sen wanted to use his will to defeat the encroaching depression, but it was too scary. He could not hold it off. He was forced to experience all those sad stories, and they hurt him. He wanted to die.

Han Sen quickly focused on trying to fight against the depression with Lone Bamboo.

In that arena, Lone Bamboo and Han Sen were standing in front of each other. Lone Bamboo looked like a demon, and Han Sen had his eyes shut, with all color drained from his face.

The quiet now was scarier than if they were having a swordfight. Lone Bamboo's terrifying presence was growing in magnitude. It was like a broken dam that could not hold back the flood.

Lone Bamboo looked hopeless, as if he wanted to bring ruin to everything. His hand moved to the jade sword on his waist.

“Oh, no! Lone Bamboo can’t restrain it anymore,” Yun Changkong said, looking sick.

The elders of Sky Palace arrived at the arena. They all stared down at Lone Bamboo seriously.

The sadness and loneliness of thousands of years was something that not even a King could withstand. Even the leader of Sky Palace himself could not fix something such as this. All they could do was watch, for they could not help him.

If you were sick in your heart, you had to help yourself. If Lone Bamboo could not do this, not even God could save him.

Han Sen was not any better than Lone Bamboo, and now he was fighting against that depression. His will was being consumed by the hollowness spreading through him.

No matter how strong a human was, everyone had some measure of empathy. The lives Han Sen was seeing would make even a god cry. And Han Sen was just a human.

Han Sen’s eyes were starting to become dull, and his body felt like death.

“Oh, no! Han Sen has been invaded by Lone Bamboo’s demon.” Thousand Feather Crane could see something was amiss. He spoke to Yun Changkong, “Master, should we take Han Sen out of there?”

“Han Sen cannot be moved now. He is the one that triggered Lone Bamboo’s depression. His presence is helping Lone Bamboo. He still wants to win. If Han Sen was taken away, then Lone Bamboo would lose his purpose. He would break completely, and then there’d be no hope left,” Yun Changkong said while shaking his head.

Lone Bamboo's eyes looked murderous, and his face looked demonic. His breathing was hoarse. The green veins in his hand were bulging, stretching the skin. He pulled out his jade sword slowly. The jade sword was like a mountain.

In Sky Palace, a woman frowned.

“Leader, Lone Bamboo cannot control his demon. Are you not going to help?”

The Sky Palace leader shook his head. “If we strike now, we will only save a corpse. He has to save himself.”

“The demon is in his heart. How is he going to save himself?” the lady said.

“If his will is there, he still has a chance to get through this alive,” the Sky Palace leader said quietly.

“Where will he find the faith he needs?” the lady asked.

The Sky Palace leader did not answer. He looked at the arena, where Han Sen and Lone Bamboo were.

Lone Bamboo had drawn a jade sword. It was a clean blade, without a single mark or speck of dust on its surface. But the jade sword had a terrifying aura, as if it was carrying all the fires of hell.

Then, under the weight of the depression, Lone Bamboo's whole body became wreathed in black fire. The fire was disturbing to look at.

Lone Bamboo lifted the jade sword towards Han Sen. He walked slowly, his lips moving as he went. He was speaking too quietly for anyone to hear what he was saying, though.

“Has Lone Bamboo fallen fully under the control of the demon?” Thousand Feather Crane asked.

Many of the elites and elders thought Lone Bamboo was being controlled by the heart demon. It wanted to unleash its anger and kill Han Sen. Their expressions looked horrified.

The Sky Palace students saw Lone Bamboo reach Han Sen. He was like a man-eating demon. It was a sight that shocked them.

Han Sen stood motionless, his eyes still closed. It was like he didn't know Lone Bamboo was coming. His face turned grey, and his presence was fading fast.

All the nightmares kept flashing through his head. He had been infected by them. Although they were not as real to him as they were for Lone Bamboo, they were deep in his heart.

Lone Bamboo stepped over to Han Sen with red eyes. He raised his sword and swung it at Han Sen.

Yun Suyi screamed.

Yun Changkong and the elders were now wondering if they should save Han Sen.

But Lone Bamboo's sword did not reach Han Sen. He pointed it at Han Sen's nose, and then he roared like a monster. "Fight me!"

"He is not lost!" the crowd realized, thrilled.

Han Sen's eyes opened, and he grabbed his Ghost Teeth Knife.

Chapter 1997 - Knife and Sword Battle

1997 Knife and Sword Battle

The knife and the sword made a crackling noise when they clashed. The knife and sword
airs broke at the same time.

Slashing. Thrusting. Swiping. Han Sen and Lone Bamboo's techniques were very simple,
but they were also very deadly.

The battles before had been stunning enough, but this was a genuine fight. They had only
been comparing skills before this. Now that they were fighting, their movements were
simple and direct, without any added flair or style. But even so, every single attack was
incredibly scary. Life and death were one misstep apart.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The knife and the sword kept attacking. The sword airs and the knife airs were running at
maximum power, and the swordmind and knifemind of the fighters swirled around the
arena.

Their minds were growing in strength as the terrifying fight progressed, and suddenly,
they were breaking into a King class tier of battle. They were like wild horses that couldn't
stop running.

"Their minds are still increasing. This is cheating! Are they going to become deified? They
are just Earls!"

"They have ascended so high because the depression is driving them forward. They
cannot escape the effect it is having on them."

"If they are Earls, why are they fighting so far out of their league?"

“It is a shame that if they keep fighting, there won’t be a winner. It will be a tragedy no matter who comes out on top.”

“It’d be a tragedy if they did not fight, as well. For now, Brother Bamboo has faith. If they stop fighting, his perseverance will be consumed by the depression.”

“It would be useless to continue the exams after this fight. No one else could stand up to either of those two.”

Yun Suyi was so scared. She grabbed Yun Sushang’s shoulder. Her heart was thumping with every knife and sword flash. She looked pale.

Yun Sushang held her hand and comforted her.

“Master, if they keep fighting, the depression will affect them more and more. Should we stop them?” Thousand Feather Crane could see that their situation was a poor one.

Yun Changkong shook his head. “It is too late for them to retreat. If they do that, they will die. For now, they can only proceed. They are going through hell, so they have to keep going. They need to survive in death. If they do this, they might have a chance.”

“Survive in death?” Yun Suyi quickly asked.

Yun Changkong sighed and said, “The depression will only increase as they fight. But this is also a release of that energy. Lone Bamboo kept it suppressed for the longest time. If he is able to unleash it all now, there is a hope he will end up fine. It’ll be difficult, but there is nothing else he can do.”

“What about Han Sen? Does he need to release energy?” Yun Suyi asked.

Yun Changkong shook his head. “It is the opposite for him. He does not need to release anything. He is being affected by Lone Bamboo’s depression. The demon resides inside Lone Bamboo, so Han Sen is fighting to keep his emotions from destroying himself. He is fighting for his life right now; he won’t want himself to die.”

“How this fight ends will depend on Han Sen. If he gives in to the demon and ends up wanting to die, Lone Bamboo will lose his purpose and give in to the demon, too. Even if Han Sen can withstand that demon, if he stops fighting with Lone Bamboo and allowing him to release his depression, things will end up the same. So, Han Sen cannot afford to lose to himself nor Lone Bamboo.”

Hearing Yun Changkong, Yun Suyi grew more nervous than ever.

The minds of the two were strong. Under a King class shield, there was still a leak. Many of the Sky Palace students were affected, and their hearts were beating savagely in their chests. They wanted to die or destroy things.

There was a cloud in the sky, above the arena. The white cloud had a beast inside it. The cloud spread like water, covering the entire arena. It smothered the scary feelings permeating the arena, so the audience could not be affected.

“It is Dream Beast. Dream Beast removed their feelings. If their feelings reach a level a King class cannot handle...”

The students of Sky Palace felt better, but the beast in the cloud was quivering.

The King class elites could not withstand the feelings given off by Han Sen and Lone Bamboo. Their feelings were exceeding the range of a King class being. That was why the Dream Beast had to emerge and lend a hand in suppressing the emotions. It had to ensure the feelings and depression wouldn't affect the students enough to permanently harm them. Not many people could carry such depression and keep on going, as Lone Bamboo had done.

Han Sen's knife was moving like crazy, and his knifemind was going wild. His body was like a beast that could shred space.

Han Sen had received his deified knifemind from the scabbard, but he was just carrying it. It didn't belong to him, so he could not use every ounce of its strength when he used it.

But now, underneath the rage of that depression, Han Sen had to exert all his power and knifemind to retaliate against his foe. His knifemind was drawing closer to him beneath that pressure.

And Han Sen was able to understand the Teeth Knife knifemind more, as well. It was assimilating with Han Sen. The knifemind had just been a tool, but now it was becoming one with his instincts.

Teeth Knife knifemind destroyed everything, and that destructive madness spurred Han Sen with the desire to live- even in the face of all that depression.

When Han Sen merged with the Teeth Knife knifemind, Ghost Teeth Knife became stronger.

Ghost Teeth Knife followed Han Sen because of the deified knifemind he possessed. It was not following Han Sen explicitly. So, with Han Sen limited ability to use the deified knifemind, he still hadn't been able to unlock Ghost Teeth Knife's true power.

But when Han Sen combined with the deified knifemind, Ghost Teeth Knife's true power was triggered through Han Sen.

Boom!

Han Sen felt the scary power of Ghost Teeth Knife flow out of the knife. If he hadn't awakened it, the demon would have lost control. A mark on Lone Bamboo's forehead cracked. An eye opened there, and it began to bleed.

Han Sen had seen Thousand Feather Crane's eye, which was perfectly clear. Lone Bamboo's was different.

Lone Bamboo's Sky eye was full of a murderous feeling. The mere sight of it could shake someone's soul.

When the Sky eye opened, Lone Bamboo's power increased. It was unbelievable. With dismaying speed and strength, he teleported in front of Han Sen.

Chapter 1998 - The Demon Blocking the Sky

Chapter 1998 The Demon Blocking the Sky

Han Sen slashed at Lone Bamboo, but Lone Bamboo did not dodge. He reached out his hand and grabbed Ghost Teeth Knife's blade. Blood poured from his hand, but he wasn't planning on letting go.

Han Sen pulled back, but he couldn't pull Ghost Teeth Knife out of Lone Bamboo's grasp. Having opened his Sky eye, Lone Bamboo was now far stronger.

Before Han Sen could react again, Lone Bamboo's Sky eye fired a red light. It was coming toward Han Sen.

Han Sen wanted to block the red light with his left hand, but Lone Bamboo was also swinging a jade sword at him.

There was nothing he could do, so Han Sen had to react quickly. He let his knife go and evade the red light and the jade sword. When he swept past Lone Bamboo, Han Sen punched his opponent's wrist, knocking the jade sword out of his hand. He moved to grab it.

The knife and the sword had lost their respective masters. Yun Changkong and the elders said, "Oh, no!"

"What is it?" Yun Suyi asked, suddenly looking nervous.

Yun Changkong frowned and said, "Lone Bamboo is affected by a demon. He will want to destroy everything. And Han Sen's Ghost Teeth Knife is an evil knife that wishes to destroy everything, too. Han Sen's Teeth Knife knifemind was triggered. It has a very destructive element. While it is held by Lone Bamboo, it makes the demon even angrier. And..."

"And what?" Yun Suyi quickly asked.

Yun Changkong had a wry smile. “And Lone Bamboo’s jade sword is not a holy weapon. It is just a practice sword made from a Xuan Jade Spirit. Aside from being sturdy, it is practically useless. Han Sen has exchanged his King class weapon that aligned with his Teeth Knife knifeskills for a simple practice sword. And on top of that, Lone Bamboo has his eye open. I don’t think Han Sen can keep up much longer.”

“How... Lone Bamboo’s jade sword... How can it be a practice sword?” Yun Suyi and the others looked at it in shock. “Hmph.” Yun Changkong sighed and did not explain.

After Lone Bamboo gripped Ghost Teeth Knife, the evil presence rose up, stoking the murderous power within him. He looked like a demon that wished destruction on all the world.

Boom!

He slashed towards Han Sen. The knifelight looked like a demon, coming to consume Han Sen. It looked like Teeth Knife, minus its Teeth power. It did have Ghost Teeth Knife powers, though, and the depression powers as well. It was more powerful now than it had been when Han Sen was using it.

“Palace Leader, are you not going to intervene? Han Sen is not going to be able to withstand that strike. They will both be destroyed,” said a woman, frowning at Sky Palace leader.

The leader squinted his eyes and said, “There is no rush.”

The lady felt saddened by this, and she said, “Lone Bamboo is your student, and Han Sen is one of Yisha’s people. If anything happens, you can be the one to inform Yisha herself. You can do anything you wish, since you aren’t afraid of her.”

In the arena, Han Sen was wielding the jade sword. His swordmind exploded. He attacked the scary knifemind. The sword skills were those Lone Bamboo had just used.

The weapons had swapped owners, and the skills had been swapped now, too. The fight continued, with no winner seeming likely to emerge.

“Sh*t! Brother Lone Bamboo can use knives? And Han Sen can use swords, as well? This is strange! He can’t be like Lone Bamboo, having experienced lifetimes of nightmares, right?”

“He’s the only one who can fight Lone Bamboo like this.”

Even King class sorts like Yun Changkong were surprised. They hadn’t expected that Han Sen would be able to use the practice sword effectively against Lone Bamboo. His swordskills were very scary, and they appeared even stronger than when he used kniveskills. Unfortunately, his powers were a little suppressed by Lone Bamboo. He was still at a disadvantage.

Lone Bamboo, with his Sky eye open and an activated Ghost Teeth Knife, made Han Sen’s Earl body look meager.

Han Sen was being careful. He knew he could not use super king spirit here, and he could not use his own swordskills. That was why he had to use Lone Bamboo’s swordskills to fight.

Han Sen summoned the ant queen’s mark, then he summoned the rabbit shoes and red mink glove. Now, Han Sen’s situation was not as dire.

Han Sen stabilized the fight, then turned his mind back to the battle.

The battle was so breath-taking that the students were forgetting to breathe. Everyone just stared at Han Sen and Lone Bamboo. They did not want to miss a single moment.

Lone Bamboo’s body was becoming stronger. Ghost Teeth Knife was triggered by his depression, and his full powers were showing.

Every slash was fueled with enough power to break space.

Han Sen wasn’t wielding as much power, but his swordskills were flawless. When he moved, the jade sword was like a lotus flower. He was not at a disadvantage.

But Lone Bamboo's depression was getting stronger, and it was rising quickly. The presence surrounding him was becoming scarier. Han Sen had to fight back Lone Bamboo and the depression at the same time. He was feeling the pressure.

Suddenly, Lone Bamboo fell back across the arena floor. He kept his distance, and he just stared at Han Sen. His three eyes were red, and they looked like those of a demon.

Han Sen looked at Lone Bamboo, but he did not feel happy. He felt heavier.

Lone Bamboo was holding Ghost Teeth Knife. His presence seemed like it was on fire. He suddenly generated a real fire and blew it up into the sky.

"Leveled up?" Yun Changkong and the others were shocked.

Many students in Sky Palace understood what was going on, as well. Lone Bamboo, amidst all that was happening, was becoming a Marquise.

The Sky eye was red, like a bloodied sea. When Lone Bamboo changed, the Sky eye's red sea began to deepen. A horrifying power was swelling out of that eye, and it made Lone Bamboo's body stronger and stronger.

Ghost Teeth Knife was becoming stronger, too. The knife was wreathed in fire, like a demon roaring.

Lone Bamboo leveled up to the rank of Marquise and broke the equilibrium of the battlefield. An endless surge of power went into Ghost Teeth Knife, making it stronger. The knife's flames were like a demon's, and it covered the entire arena.

Han Sen thought he could fight Lone Bamboo with his presence and mind, but now he was under such suppression that he couldn't even release his powers.

The whole place was quiet. Only the flickering knife made a sound, roaring like a bonfire.

Chapter 1999 - Dongxuan Breakthrough

Chapter 1999 Dongxuan Breakthrough

Ghost Teeth Knife's fire was getting scary. The power kept building, and Lone Bamboo was on the verge of losing all control. He was going to generate the strongest strike he could to end the fight and kill Han Sen.

The frightening knife flames lay seemed to exert incredible force on the broken arena, and the floor had already dropped a few feet. Han Sen's knifemind and depression were harming him. He could not unleash the power or the sensations inside his body.

But suppression like that made Han Sen feel energized. When people like Han Sen were put under greater pressure, they could perform much better.

Facing Lone Bamboo, who had just become a Marquise, heightened Han Sen's desire to win. The negativity he was under now affected him far less.

Spell's armor was flashing white. Her skin and bones turned a jade color. The blood in Han Sen's body was boiling and roaring.

Han Sen raised the jade sword in his hand. That jade sword lacked special powers, but it had not so much as cracked in the intense fighting. It was a testament to the quality of its craft.

Han Sen looked at Lone Bamboo, and then he stroked the blade of the jade sword. He poured power into it, but the power was very tame. It rested inside the sword, waiting to be unleashed.

Seeing Han Sen's behavior, Yun Suyi grabbed Yun Sushang and asked, "Is Han Sen hoping to accept this next attack?"

“It seems that way.” Yun Sushang did not understand, either. If both fighters were Marquise, then Han Sen might have stood a chance. With an entire tier between them, however, there was no way Han Sen could withstand such an attack.

“He has no choice but to accept this strike,” Yun Changkong said.

“Why?” Yun Suyi asked, confused.

“The arena is too small. Lone Bamboo’s demon has locked down the entire arena. If Han Sen is still in that arena, he won’t be able to evade it. So, he has to muster what he has to take it,” Yun Changkong said.

“Can he defend against it? There is a whole level of difference between Earls and Marquises.” Yun Suyi’s voice sounded shaky. She looked disturbed.

Yes, he can endure it.” Before Yun Changkong answered, someone else walked in and answered the question for him.

Yun Suyi looked over towards the voice, and she saw a man staring down on the arena. His eyes were red. He looked more nervous than the fighters on the field.

“Yu Jing, how do you know Han Sen can endure this attack?” Thousand Feather Crane asked Yu Jing.

“Fenghou Pills. I gave him a Fenghou Pill. If he takes it, he can temporarily wield the power of a Marquise. So, yes; he can take this attack, and he will win.” Yu Jing sounded like he was talking to himself, trying to make himself feel better.

“Fenghou Pills?” Yun Sushang and the others were shocked. “Why did you give him Fenghou Pills?”

“I bet every penny I had that he would win ten times in a row. He has to win; it’s either that or bankruptcy.” Yu Jing sounded like his words had been squeezed out through his teeth. His fists were clenched so hard, his nails were digging into the flesh.

If Han Sen's opponent hadn't been Lone Bamboo, Yu Jing would not have been so desperate. But the match was on now, and all was on the line. If Han Sen lost, Yu Jing would be dealt a devastating blow.

"It is good for him to have the Fenghou Pills. In that case, Han Sen can win." Yun Suyi was very happy to hear Han Sen still had a chance.

Yun Changkong sighed and said, "He would have a chance if he had eaten it at the beginning. Now it is too late."

"What is too late?" Yu Jing demanded. His sudden fear made him rather impolite.

Yun Changkong did not mind, though. He calmly said, "Lone Bamboo's knifemind has already locked on to Han Sen. Any mistake on his part will prompt Lone Bamboo to attack. Do you think he has the time to take a pill?"

Yu Jing looked as if he had been electrified. He froze on the spot.

Yun Suyi had just been feeling calmer, but now she was nervous again. She said, "What do we do? Will Lone Bamboo kill Han Sen?"

"It is doubtful that the leader would stand idly by and let Han Sen be murdered. But if he stops this now, then Lone Bamboo will be destroyed," Yun Changkong said with regret.

In the arena, Ghost Teeth Knife's power was increasing. Han Sen was holding the jade sword between himself and the knifemind. He was like a mountain, and he wasn't affected.

An amazing energy was coursing through Han Sen's body. It was the Dongxuan Sutra. Under the suppression of his opponent, the Dongxuan Sutra was finally having a breakthrough. It was becoming Earl class, and the Dongxuan Aura was imbuing Han Sen with a grander power.

Although it was not enough to fight back Lone Bamboo's knifemind, the energy release was making Han Sen's eyes clearer.

The knifemind and the depression were things that Han Sen could see as sequence chains. They looked like a giant spider web, all around Han Sen.

When the Dongxuan Aura got stronger, the sequence chain became easier to discern. A level of detail that he had never previously discerned was now becoming clear.

Boom!

The Dongxuan Sutra's power exploded in Han Sen's body. It was like it was breaking all the cells inside Han Sen's body.

Although the feeling was destructive and strange, it gave Han Sen the sense of chains being severed. Under the suppression of the knifemind and the depression, he felt rather relaxed. He felt as if he was facing a fire and a wind, but they were raging around him rather than against him.

The pressure suddenly disappeared. No matter how powerful it was, in Han Sen's eye, it was just a sequence chain.

Two different powers were rising inside Han Sen's body, and they were pumped into the jade sword. The sword started to shine with a bright light.

Teeth Knife knifemind began to synergize with Han Sen's swordmind. They fit together like two halves of a zipper. Two completely different powers were combining into one inside the jade sword. The light from the jade sword extinguished the knife's fire.

Han Sen stood silently, holding the sword before him. He was like a god, standing amidst the knife's fire. No matter how much Lone Bamboo or Ghost Teeth Knife leveled up, they could not suppress Han Sen's power.

Chapter 2000 - The Battle Ends

Chapter 2000 The Battle Ends

The students watched the fight with gaping mouths. Han Sen's power didn't seem as strong as Lone Bamboo's, but it felt as if the contestants were somehow even. The situation almost seemed self-contradictory.

The King class observers noticed Han Sen's energy, and when they saw it, they were shocked. They felt the same thing that the students felt, but they could understand a bit more.

Han Sen wasn't as powerful as Lone Bamboo, who was a Marquise. But it seemed that his energy wasn't being suppressed. He was getting stronger.

Despite the fact that Lone Bamboo's knifemind was continuing to grow, Han Sen wasn't being crushed under the weight.

Both of them were emanating a terrifying intensity, and it was visible in their eyes. The students that watched the fight were not seeing Han Sen and Lone Bamboo anymore. It was just an evil demon fighting a jade-white shadow. When both of them collided, it was like day and night. Neither of them gained the upper hand, and neither of them was put down.

Boom!

Two powers were being pushed to their max. They crossed a threshold, and Dream Beast was unable to hold back the force they were letting off. The power spilled out, and many of the students of Sky Palace felt as if their heads were going to explode.

Lone Bamboo roared. He lifted Ghost Teeth Knife above his head with both hands. He summoned that scary power to strike Han Sen down.

Yun Changkong and the other elders grimaced. They knew this next strike would commit a tragedy. There was no way back now.

The leader of Sky Palace sighed. He stood up from his chair and readied himself to get involved.

Han Sen pointed the jade sword at Lone Bamboo. He was like a mountain. He did not look scared, and neither did it look as if he wanted to take a single step back.

Lone Bamboo looked frightening. His body and knife combined into one. His murderous fire erupted like that of a volcano, spewing into the sky.

Just when everyone thought Lone Bamboo was going to slash, Ghost Teeth Knife remained in the air and unmoving. Lone Bamboo looked at Han Sen, or rather, the sword he wielded. When he did, a complex expression overtook his face.

On a green grassy field, a little girl that was nine years old was holding a jade sword. She had ponytails. She was practicing swordskills, and she was obviously a beginner. She accidentally hit herself on the head and dropped onto the ground. She threw the sword away and wiped the tears from her eyes.

“Wan’er, why are you crying?” a young man asked, smiling. He crouched down next to her and took her head in a gentle hand.

“Big Brother, I am not practicing with a sword anymore. That stupid sword just bullied me!” Wan’er said, wiping her tears.

“How could your sword bully you? He is your most loyal, little guy. If you treat him well, he will be nice to you in return,” the young man said, as he picked up the jade sword.

Wan’er lifted her lips and said, “I am nice to it. I wipe it clean and even make it smell good, but even so, it just won’t listen to me. It’s annoying!”

The young man laughed. He held the jade sword, and as he stood upon the grass, he began to swing it. That jade sword was light in his hand, as spry as a dragon in a dance.

“Wan’er, to treat it nice is to understand it. Wiping it clean is not enough.” The young man stopped practicing, and he handed it back to the girl and rubbed her on the head.

“I don’t care. I hate it. It won’t listen to me. It only listens to you.” Wan’er sounded mad, but even so, she looked happy.

In a garden, a young man lay down beside a pond and repeatedly threw up. He was going to puke his guts out.

“Brother, how can you drink like that?” A lady with a big ponytail walked out of the house. She ran up to the young man and tried to help him up.

“Ignore me. It is fine,” the man mumbled.

“Brother, to fail is nothing. I know you are the best, and I know you have what it takes to win. You have to stay strong,” the lady spoke with sincerity, as she lifted the young man upright.

The young man fell back to the ground and passed out. He was too heavy to lift without any help.

The lady tried to pull him up, but she was unable to. She ran to the house and collected a blanket. With it, she covered him. Then, she sat down near him and prayed to the stars. “If there is a God up there, I hope you can help my brother and show him the way. I will do anything for that.”

Under the moon, the man lay on the ground with tears in his eyes.

“Wan’er.” Lone Bamboo looked at the jade sword and moved his lips. He did not make a noise, but his eyes said he was thinking of many things.

“I can’t fall... I can’t fall... If I am going to die... Even with just a dirty soul left... I have to keep going...” Lone Bamboo’s teeth shook, but his eyes looked adamant.

The knife’s fire was like a demon in the sky. It was just fading, rather than being destroyed.

“Lone Bamboo seems to have woken up a little.” The woman next to the Sky Palace leader sounded surprised.

Yun Changkong and the elders looked happy, but it was only for a second.

The demon’s roots were deep, and not even a King class could suppress it completely. It was remarkable that Lone Bamboo had managed to get his mind back in this condition, but there was no way he could suppress the desire of the demon.

Han Sen watched Lone Bamboo, surprised. Lone Bamboo controlled the demon at the very last second. He did not give in to it.

Lone Bamboo’s body quivered. He had experienced pain that could not be described. That scary depression and knifemind were fading inside him.

Everyone looked so happy. Lone Bamboo pushed the demon back into his body. Now, he was scarier than a ghost. The Nobles were all delighted. They had no clue how he had done that.

Han Sen put away his own powers. He lowered the jade sword and looked at Lone Bamboo. The power was no longer encompassing the arena.

Lone Bamboo threw Ghost Teeth Knife over to Han Sen. He said simply, “I am a Marquise. I should not fight. You win this round.”

Han Sen picked up Ghost Teeth Knife and handed over the jade sword.

Lone Bamboo accepted the jade sword, wiped it clean, and resheathed it in his scabbard. That sword was his most precious possession.

Seeing Lone Bamboo leave, Han Sen spoke to himself. “His body contains a demon, but his heart possesses an angel. Strange man.”

No one expected the scary spectacle to end this way, but it didn't affect the overall excitement.

A long time after that fight came to an end, people continued to talk about it. Those who watched that fight didn't forget the appearance of the fighters. They would never forget.